

GAMEBANG AND THE DIVINE COMEDY

AN ABSOLUTE FUCKING EPIC AFTER DEATH

The day after arc: recap

Gamebang and the Divorce: GB cheated on Venti and got divorced and Alizeh uh did unspeakable things to Sucrose. GB dates Ciarda but she fucked him over and now he's depressed but [Insert Genshinplace member] cheers him up. Later, the entire gang is called by Polandball to search the missing time machine in the ocean.

Gamebang and the Kingdom of Atlantis: The gang travel to Atlantis and meet Aqua. Alizeh regretted what she did so she stole Polandball's time machine, with the help of Com Insydeme. GB and crew try to stop her but they was too late. Michael tried giving Com a chance to change, but he betrayed him.

Gamebang and The Collapse of Time: Alizeh is destroying and creating timelines left and right to try and create the perfect timeline. Polandball crew travel the newly created glitching multiverse to stop Alizeh and encounter multiple new characters. Everyone unites to finally fight Alizeh. To stop some of the corruption, Eren had to kill his Eldritch friend Lu-Kthu. At the end of it all, Gamebang convinces Alizeh to stop. Alizeh kills herself to save everyone. After the adventure, the entire gang separates.

Gamebang and The Quiet Fallout: GB goes to prison and works on himself as well as tutoring Alizeh's friend Collei, while confronting Alizeh's sins. [Insert Genshinplace member] is now Aqua's assistant and finds Com a year after the Collapse of Time, they end up giving Com a chance for redemption. Eren meets an old friend in Inazuma aka Historia and they're both gay as fuck. Morbius meets Gwenpool and they just hang out I guess. Michael and Obama travel to Antarctica to find some multiversal anomaly that appeared on their radar, which turns out to be a girl named Lily, who is from the future, prophesizing a major crisis one year from now. Ciarda is doing well after being helped by GB, Nilou is still dancing, Venti is dating Xiao now, Astolfo is happy, and Goofy got Mickey pregnant with his child, and its Lily. Gamebang gets a mansion and lets Collei and Izerak chill there. Obama got a message from Aqua that Inazuma is trying an experiment by the NFI where all crime will be legal for 12 hours in the city of Ritou, but hints at a much greater danger beyond life.

New story: Love and Deception Arc.

Keep reading to see the Angels fighting demons.

Chapter 1: Abandon all hope, ye who enter here.

Beep, Beep... Beep, Beep... The alarm went off, interrupting his sleep. His hand furiously slapped it to stop making noise, but Gamebang was already awake anyway.

After struggling to get out of bed, Gamebang got to work on getting dressed after taking a shower. It was cold water, so he's fucking dying.

Suited up, he left his mansion and walked to his destination, Liberty University, where Collei studied. It's a 30 minute walk, full of crossing roads and praying to not die. Once he arrived, he looked for Collei's dorm room. He doesn't know where it is, but he somehow always finds it after mindlessly wandering down multiple hallways and floors.

He enters her dorm and Collei is there, playing roblox. Once she sees Gamebang, she stops gaming and gets her study materials ready. Gamebang begins to teach her how to divide, as she is very uneducated. This lasts 2 hours, with a little break in between.

Gamebang always tries to find ways to make her learn more effectively. She likes fun, so make learning fun. And so he did in the form of some weird ass board game he invented that was a Monopoly recolor. He was trying to teach her the hell of capitalism. Weirdly enough, she keeps winning the game even when Gamebang is actually trying. She's gonna be big in this economy, he thought.

[Insert GenshinPlace member] wakes up and gets dressed in royal attire. Their schedule is always very detailed so that their mental state brings only the best result for being uh Aqua's servant. As always, they wake up full of energy.

Being Aqua's servant brings many challenges, such as listening to her rant about various topics she has no knowledge about. Another challenge is trying to convince her to make schools a thing in Atlantis, since they aren't. Aqua argues you don't need school to become successful and smart. She never went to school, by the way, and she thinks the planet Neptune is flat. Like, out of every planet, why is Neptune the only one that is flat? [Insert GenshinPlace member] has given up on trying to understand her logic and suspects she's just trying to make the general population as dumb as her.

When [Insert GenshinPlace member] isn't with Aqua, they're off doing little good deeds for the small folk of Atlantis. Today, they helped an elderly lady swim across the street.

Eren Yeager wakes up, absolutely smashed. He always doesn't remember what happened on the night before, but he is always so goddamn dirty. After cleaning himself up and doing the necessary steps to stop himself from getting STDs, he arrives at the Kamisato Estate, where Historia waits for him. She also woke up dirty as hell and practically had the same routine as Eren.

They go through classes, fighting multiple other students. Although, when it comes to a point where they might lose, they start using their secret technique. Gay sex.

They're both extraordinarily skilled in the art of having rough intercourse with the same sex. Eren, with his divine blowjob skills. Historia, with her prestine fingering technique. Their methods guarantee victory every time. They can make straight people gay in an instant.

Morbius is a traveler. Visiting various countries every week with his strange companion, Gwen, who claims everything that exists is a work of fiction. Morbius wakes up just in time for his plane to arrive at his destination.

Together with Gwen, he tries every activity he can see for the sake of experience. Today, he tried the art of eating fire. It was actually a pleasant experience.

When they aren't doing tourist stuff, Gwen helps him try to become your stereotypical superhero. Each time, Morbius accidentally commits a crime instead. He keeps telling her to stop, but she thinks he'll get it eventually. Nonetheless, Morbius just committed tax fraud and is on the run. He has to call up Goofy to help him. Goofy eventually does help everytime, even if he starts screaming whenever Morbius calls.

Michael Jackson wakes up and immediately works for duty, doing whatever Obama tells him to do. Learning from Obama's footsteps and being an efficient sidekick.

When he isn't doing that, he's helping Lily adjust to the modern world. Having lived in snow for 90/10 of her life, she needs help. Michael teaches her specifically how to turn on a stove or use an iPhone.

Michael is always with Obama, going on whatever missions they both have everyday.

Obama is always on duty and gets very little sleep, but he always tries his best. When he isn't doing missions with Michael, he's simply doing paperwork and planning his next move.

On special times, he has to do a zoom call with the Vultramites to ensure that the interdimensional alliance stays strong. Other times, he meets with Aqua to discuss diplomacy and deals to strengthen the alliance between Land and Sea. Although, he can't help but be racist towards her.

On most days, he is being the perfect leader.

Collei spends half the day in class, listening to lectures and all that jazz. Most times, she'd do homework during a lecture. She's getting better grades nowadays thanks to Gamebang. She usually spends the most time with Izerak, but only in non-class periods. They don't take the same course.

When it's a Friday, her and Izerak spend some time in Gamebang's mansion for good fun. But it's not a Friday today, it's a Wednesday, so Collei has to return to her home in the Avidya Forest.

Once she does, Tighnari prepares for her dinner. Sometimes, Cyno will be there, eating alongside Collei since he isn't that good at cooking. Collei and Cyno would play TCG and Cyno would always win by any means necessary.

Then, she'd go back to sleep in the night. Tomorrow will be another day, starting with Gamebang's tutoring, class hours, and the rest of the afternoon.

Com Insydeme lives a relatively normal life in the kingdom of Atlantis. He has a house, a job, friends. On weekends, he'd spend some time with [Insert GenshinPlace member] for therapy reasons. He tries to be a good person everyday, trying atone for the past. All that matters is that he's trying.

After lessons from the Kamisato Estate, Historia usually goes back to Eren's place to hang out. This is where she usually does her rule of 'One bad decision a day.'

She'd eat dinner there and then go home and definitely not to a bar for lesbians. Why would she do that. I mean, it's not like she goes there every night. Weirdly enough, there's a gay bar for men on the other street, and she always sees someone who looks like Eren walk in. But it can't be him! They're not gay.

And so, she sleeps another day, wet as fuck.

Gwen is usually tagging alongside Morbius in adventures. She somehow gets to encourage him to make all sorts of bad decisions for the sake of becoming a hero. She is always surprised when it turns south.

When she's at her box that she lives in (she's homeless.) She's usually rereading the Gamebang fics and wonders how the next one (this one) will turn out.

And then she falls asleep drunk.

Lily isn't with Michael all the time, so she doesn't get much help in adjusting to modern society. But she tries.

Today, she figured out how to copy and paste text.

She's always doing whatever to get by in life. But at night, she tries to figure out ways to prevent the upcoming crisis that happens a year from now. She hasn't found any solution, but she'll keep trying.

One thing she tries to do also is find her parents. She doesn't remember that much about them other than they were both male.

But until then, she will live normally until the day of salvation arrives.

Aqua usually sits on the Atlantic Throne for hours at a time, it's surprising her ass is still big as it is. She may as well sleep on that throne. She gives command to others whilst sitting, making sure Atlantis is safe.

When she isn't sitting, she's in her bedroom. She says hi to the pictures of her old dead friends and goes on with her day, listening to Com's music, giggling and shaking her legs. She is a massive fan girl.

When she's not acting like a teenager, sometimes she'll meet with Obama for political reasons.

Hours prior to these meetings, she'd take anti-racism lessons to not say the wrong thing to Obama. However, it's always useless, as she always resorts to calling him a monkey. Although, he can't seem to stop himself from being racist towards her too.

At night, she makes [Insert GenshinPlace member] listen to all her rants and other things. [Insert GenshinPlace member] at this point has bags in their eyes darker than black.

And then, Aqua takes the peaceful slumber of a princess.

It's just another day.

...

Obama POV

It's been a week since Aqua told me about the situation in Inazuma, as well as the wars to come. Tonight is the experiment in Ritou, and I pray it doesn't yield good results. However, I know that man has a lion unchecked that yearns to be released from its cage.

"Aqua." I said. She was sitting right in front of me. It was another meeting. "You know what tonight is?"

"Yup." She responded. "Your friend Eren is in Inazuma, right?"

"I doubt he'd try and participate."

"I don't know, Obama, that reward for participation is pretty damn nice."

"Reward?"

"50,000 Mora for participating in the experiment."

"Jesus, the NFI is going all out."

"Indeed." She took a sip of tea. "So... Have you noticed anything lately?"

"Hm?"

"You know, what I've told you about a week prior?"

"A war is coming, but not of this world?" I remembered her exact words.

"Yeah, that one."

"What about it?"

"It's coming sooner than you think."

"Okay..." I was confused and kinda nervous. "Why couldn't you given us like a heads up about it? A war sounds serious."

"I don't even know if you'll fight in it." Aqua stated. "I don't know what happens. But all I know is that realms beyond this world are at war, and if the stakes are escalated high enough, this world we live in is going to be affected." Aqua's face looked serious. "But not only this world. These two realms are what binds the civilizations of the universe into one singular belief. Our world isn't the only one, but every single creature in the universe. In other words, all that is living."

"Universe?" I was getting concerned. "Aqua, stop speaking in riddles."

"Two realms, Obama. Beyond this world. And important to the universe and all living things. Another hint for you; The end. What do you think it is?"

"I seriously have no idea, Aqua."

She sighed. "You knew that I used to be a Goddess, right?"

"Yup."

"Just because I'm not a Goddess anymore doesn't mean I still don't have contact with old friends who are Goddesses. My friend Eris, who pads her chest, told me info lately that worries me about what's to come in the future."

"Why was the point of her padding her chest important?" It seemed out of topic to me.

"Because she does. She pads her chest. Those boobs are fake and are flat as fuck."

"I don't even know who she is, Aqua."

"Well, just know she's a flat bitch."

I'm not sure that's how you're supposed to speak about your friend...

"Anyway." Aqua continued. "She called me up on discord one night..."

Deities have discord?

"And she told me that between the Inferno and the Paradiso, tensions are rising and both desire to be the only one left."

"Inferno? Paradiso?" These terms sounded familiar.

"Yup. Those two are at war." Aqua stated. "Know what they both are?"

"They sound familiar I guess."

"Heaven and Hell." Aqua said. "Heaven and Hell are at war."

Oh god. I totally forgot those two were an actual thing in our universe. I remember that in the original timeline, Astolfo had an army from hell itself.

Wait...

"What do they both want out of this war?" I asked, concerned.

"To destroy the other." Aqua stated. "It's going down, honestly. When the war ends, there will be only one standing left in the afterlife. Heaven or Hell, only one will remain."

"Why? The universe needs a balance for punishment and reward."

"These two realms have been at conflict since the dawn of time. Never forget how Hell was created, a Rebellion against Heaven." Aqua explained.

"So..." I didn't know what to say. "What now?"

"Can you guys stop the war?" She asked. Uh, what the fuck.

"What the fuck?"

"What?" She said as if it was something we do on a weekend. "You guys apparently saved the entire multiverse, some measly two realms shouldn't be an issue? I recall you guys went to the Court of Azathoth and the Dreamlands. Your portfolio is practically unbelievable."

I sighed. "I guess you're right... But like, man, I am still recovering from that event."

"I'm sure you can find a way." She said. "You guys always do."

"Me and my friends." I stated heavily. "And me and my friends are separated. It was the gang that achieved everything, and the gang isn't here together."

"You're wrong." She said. "Wherever you guys are, you'll always be together. Even if it's not physical." She stood up. "I know it in my heart. All of you simply have to believe."

She walked out of the room and shut the door, leaving me alone and stuck in thought.

...

Eren POV

It was my first time doing a gay furry orgy, but it wasn't that bad! The fur added to the stimulation. Although, it didn't really allow me to eat their crusty toes, which was always my favorite. Plus, a costume of an animal isn't as good as a man's natural body, feeling his chest bumping against your cheeks, and feeling another bump from below his boxers.

I said no homo before the orgy started, so it's not gay. I'm not gay.

Anyway, it was the morning. Historia went inside my room with a poster in her hand.

"Eren!" She seemed excited. "Look!"

The poster said that something was happening in Ritou and that anyone who participated would get 50k Mora.

"50k? Damn..." I said. "We could really use that for more toys... What's the event about?"

"12 hours tonight, all crime will be legal and we won't get punished!"

"Holy shit what."

"I know right!?"

"So... I can finally have public gay sex in the middle of the road without getting arrested!?"

"YES!"

"YES!"

We both shouted in unison. "YESSSS!!"

And then we were both quiet for a while until...

"Not gay tho." I said.

"Yeah, totally." She responded. "So we signing up?"

"Damn right we are. I need me some money so I can keep paying Goofy to get me out of jail."

God bless the NFI.

...

Michael POV

"It's starting." Lily said as she ate her ice cream. "The first major event before the crisis..."

"Uh, what?" I questioned her.

"I know something is supposed to happen today, and it's supposed to all take place in a single day."

"Well it can't be that bad if it's just a 24 hours. 18 hours now since time has passed."

"I don't think anything of note happens in this world specifically." She explained. "But a major part of the universe is doing to be affected."

"Well, it has nothing to do with us." I said. "Not everything that happens in existence has to be dealt with by PolandBall."

"MICHAEL!" Obama came storming in to our conversation. "I NEED YOU TO DIE AND GO TO HEAVEN."

"Damn it." I said.

"Well, looks like PolandBall is involved again." Lily smirked.

"I need you to die and go to heaven because let's be honest you're going there." Obama explained. "Figure the rest out when you're there."

"I don't know whether to be flattered or concerned that I'm going to heaven but also to do something important apparently."

"I'm not coming with you though, because I'm kinda afraid my college days will come back to haunt me and send me to hell instead." Obama said.

"Uh, what?"

"Nothing."

"So... Will I be brought back to life?" I asked. I really liked living.

"Yup." Obama said. "We got a machine that will hook you up real nice and dead for a few hours and then bring you back to life."

"Well that's convenient."

...

"Ready to die?" Obama said. I was strapped to this weird lil machine that would electrocute me to death.

"Yup." I said. "Send me to heaven baby."

"Have fun in the Paradiso."

Obama turned on the machine, and I felt pain. But then everything turned black.

And for a while, I was at peace.

And then I saw the light.

...

Gamebang POV

"Literature questions." I said to Collei. I am giving her a little quiz in preparation for her exams. "Who wrote The Divine Comedy?"

"Dante Alighieri." Collei answered correctly.

"What does the word 'Inferno' mean?"

"Hell."

"What about Paradiso?"

"Heaven or paradise."

"Tell me the 9 layers of hell."

"Limbo, Lust, Gluttony, Greed, Anger, Heresy, Violence, Fraud, and Treachery."

"What about the layers of the Paradiso?"

"The moon, Mercury, Venus, the Sun, Mars, Jupiter, Saturn, The Fixed Stars, the Primum Mobile, and the Empyrean."

"Good job, Collei." She was getting good at this stuff. "One last question! What's the famous quote in Dante's Inferno that is said before they enter Hell itself?"

She thought about it for a while. I guess she forgot.

Suddenly, her eyes widened in shock. She was looking at something behind me.

She screamed and stood up, frantically picking up her bow and arrow.

I looked behind me to see someone standing. However, I couldn't see who they were.

But before long, they held a gun to my head. Not even less than a second after turning around...

BANG!

...

Darkness.

...

"Abandon all hope, ye who enter here."

Chapter 2: Canto.

Michael POV

After climbing the stairway to heaven, I met someone guarding the gate. They tell me all the stuff about death and how I died and what I did and why I am here in heaven and basically said I'm gonna be chilling in the 2nd sphere of heaven, Mercury.

Mercury is bright as hell because it's next to the sun. The people here are the ones who achieved great feats in life and are generally glorious figures. But they sit here right next to the sun because their glory pales in comparison to God or whatever higher deity is in this universe. Oh shit, I might be able to meet God. Maybe Jesus.

Anyway, I'm part of these guys who did great ambitious stuff. It's pretty chill for the most part. Mercury contains a giant endless castle of gold for people like us, filled with whatever we want that isn't sinful. For some reason, "sinful" includes apples. I guess they got traumatized the last time someone ate an apple.

I was simply sitting down next to a large swimming pool, planning my next move.

"I gotta say." Martin Luther King Jr was eating some grapes next to me. "You don't see many singers in Mercury."

"Is that so?" I'm pretty stoked that I am talking to MLK. I gotta contain my excitement. "Well I'm grateful."

My death was labeled a murder, not a suicide, even though I was perfectly fine and consented to dying. Oh shit, did I guarantee Obama going to hell? Oh shit oh fuck.

"It's bright as heck here." I told MLK. "Do you guys get used to this?"

"Yeah, eventually." He stated. "It's better than darkness at least."

"What are yall talking about?" Another joined our conversation. I looked and saw it was Guizhong, God of Dust. Morax's partner.

"Just giving away common info for our new member here." MLK said.

"Well, if you guys feel bored, J.R.R Tolkien is over in the library, reading his newest piece of work to an audience." Guizhong said. "I'll be going there myself. I gotta know what happens to Frodo's man-made ring." She walked away to library.

"Frodo's Man-made ring?" I said. "That wasn't in Lord of the Rings."

"Tolkien continues his work here in the afterlife. He's on his 85th book that continues beyond The Lord of the Rings." MLK explained. "I guess that's a benefit to being dead, stories you would never get in the world of the living. In an endless eternity after the end, what else can you do other than continue what you left off?" MLK opened up a piece of paper. "This is my script for a speech I'll be giving later."

"Interesting..." I think I'm starting to understand this place.

"Why not continue your music career here? It's eternity." He asked.

"I uh... I can't at the moment." I had to be honest. I mean, who would lie to MLK? "I wanna get into the Empyrean and see the ones on top. The ones behind the operation."

"God and his angels?"

"Yes!"

"Why didn't you just say so?"

"Uh what." Is he implying that it's easy?

"I'll take you there if you want. Although we'll have to traverse the spheres individually. But there's generally no barriers as long as you don't stay in another sphere for too long and return from whence you came."

"Oh... Okay then." Wow, that seems easy.

"We can go right now." MLK said. "You wanna?"

"Uh..." I ain't gonna lie, I was pretty intrigued by whatever new Lord of the Rings content Tolkien was making in the afterlife. "Maybe after we head to the library?"

"Sure. Take as long as you want."

I'm sorry, MLK, there's not much time left. The Inferno is coming.

...

Collei POV

"Okay, I'm not that good at interrogation, so bear with me here!" I told the man who killed Gamebang, whom I tied up in duct tape around a chair. I am currently hiding him in my basement. It has been an hour since Gamebang's death, I moved his body down here so Cyno and Tighnari don't see.

The man was a Nobushi, I could tell from his samurai styled outfit. Although, I didn't know if he was from Inazuma itself.

"Um..." I didn't know what to do. I have never done this before. "Why did you kill him?" I politely asked. Maybe they're nice?

"I ain't telling you shit." The man replied.

"Aw man..." Well, that's a bummer. "Hold on... I gotta make a phone call."

I moved to the corner of the room, but my eyes never left the man for I fear he might escape from my 1000 layers of duct tape. Then, I called Cyno.

"Hey, Cyno..."

"What is it, Collei." Cyno asked through the phone.

"How do I...torture information out of someone?"

Suddenly, Cyno sounded like he was crying. "I thought you'd never ask..."

What proceeded was a 5 minute explanation of the most inhumane things I have ever heard on God's green Earth. It seems I forgot that my phone was on speaker, so the man heard everything and was increasingly pissing himself.

"And that's how you do it!" Cyno finished.

"Oh... T-Thanks..." I hung up immediately. I slowly walked up to the man. "So... How do you wanna do this? Cut off your manhood or eat your own feces, which one first?"

"I UH OH SHIT OH FUCK."

"Honestly, I've never seen a dick before in my life, and I get squirmish at the mere mention of anything inappropriate, but this is for my tutor." I stated, completely being honest. "So... I guess cut your manhood off then."

"WAIT WAIT WAIT-"

I started taking off the guy's pants. There it was, his testicles in full display. It looked weird. It was uncircumcised. I won't be cutting off a little skin, I'm taking the entire thing off.

I grabbed the scissors from the table near me, opening it and closing it to scare the man.

If this was a different situation, I'd react differently, flabbergasted at the mere sight of such a thing. But this was different. It doesn't matter what I see or what happens.

No one hurts the people I care about.

"I WAS SENT FROM THE NFI!!!" The man confessed.

"Huh?" I snapped out of it as soon as he screamed that. What was I doing?

Oh god, was I really about to- Oh god no this isn't me! This isn't what I was raised to do!

I looked away from him because I was embarrassed and didn't wanna see his thing in my sight.

"NFI...?" I said. "What is the NFI."

"I uh..."

The man wouldn't say anything, so I opened the scissors again.

"THEY'RE A PARTY IN INAZUMA!"

"Must not be a fun party if they murder other people's tutors."

"No... I meant like an organization for the government."

"Well name your terms better." I swear, people need to do that more.

"I was sent by the NFI to..." The man hesitated, but budged. "To kill the Pawns of PolandBall."

What the heck is a PolandBall.

Okay let's think rationally, Pawns is a word referring to multiple subjects. Which might mean Gamebang was part of these subjects. Okay, yeah, Gamebang was part of PolandBall.

"Why kill them." I asked.

"I don't know... I just follow orders."

I sighed. I reluctantly put back my sights to him and cut off the duct tape.

"Put up your pants and go back to Inazuma." I said. "Tell your superiors that I will be back to paint the pink leaves of the Sacred Sakura red in their blood. After I get Gamebang back home."

I opened the door to the exit of the basement. "Go." I told them. They followed orders and ran away.

Once they left, I looked back to Gamebang's dead body. It'll be safe here for a while, in our basement.

I went back upstairs and grabbed the book Gamebang was teaching me about. "Dante's Inferno..."

...Even if there's a small chance this stuff is true, I will go. I do not sow when it comes to the end of a life.

As Gamebang once told me.

"What do we say to the God of death?"

Not today.

So it is not the day he will die. I will make sure of it.

I skimmed through the book. I knew that Dante didn't have to die to enter the Inferno, I just need to know how.

I don't know where Gamebang is, Heaven or Hell, but Dante had to go through hell and purgatory to enter heaven. So I will make the journey wherever.

"Mount Delectable..." I whispered to myself as I read the content of the book. That's where Dante entered Hell.

And that's where I am going.

...

After countless hiking and walking and money wasted and reluctantly telling Tighnari I needed a ride without specifying why resulting in a 30 minute talk about travel safety by him, I have...not made it to Mount Delectable.

Now that I think about it, I don't think it exists. Oh god, I just wasted 500\$ trying to find my way into a fictional location that was told in someone's Bible fanfic. Where even am I? I couldn't read where the buses were going to, for all I know I ended up in North Korea. Hold on, let me check Google maps.

I'm... in Monstadt.

Wait... Oh god Sumeru is 3 regions away from here, home is so far. Oh god... Why did I do this...

I always had a tendency to believe in fairy tales. Up until last month, I believed Santa Claus existed. I guess it shouldn't be a surprise that I believed someone's self-insert historical fanfiction.

Isn't that fun? We still remember The Divine Comedy and regard it as some kind of Literary piece of history, but it is ultimately fanfiction and the character of Dante is kind of a Mary Sue, or Gary Stu if you wanna use the male term. I'm not going to deny that it is an impressive work of art, it became the foundation for what many perceive to be the afterlife, I just think it's funny that we're studying fanfiction.

... Damn it. What am I doing? I believed in fanfiction?

I guess I just couldn't deny that Gamebang was dead. I guess I was still shocked that his brains were blown right in front of me.

I don't...want to accept death as the end. I don't want to accept that someone important in my life is gone. Sometimes, it feels like Alizeh will walk into my apartment and it'll be like the old times. But she is dead, and so is her father. And I can't accept that. Perhaps I never will.

I don't want Gamebang to be dead. I want to pull him out of heaven and back to the world.

My last memory of him will be his murder. And I will be haunted by whatever I did to that Nobushi. How could I do something like that? That's cruel and horrible... But at the time, it felt like the right thing to do. What is this feeling?

It's...what I felt before meeting Amber. When I escaped the Fatui's experiments and hated the world.

Have I gone back to that state of mind? Did I ever actually grow as a person?

Oh my god.

"AGH!!!"

"We can help you." The voices said. The back of my neck, the seal that kept the monsters within me, it's...
"If you let us go, then you will prosper. Let us go..."

"NO!!!" I screamed, and the voices stopped.

What...what happened?

I thought Cyno sealed the Archon Residue on my neck. But... it talked to me just a second ago.

My hand explored the back of my neck to see what was going on. As soon as I touched the seal, it hurt like heck. I pulled back and looked at my hand.

Blood. Tons of blood.

Honestly, the sight of blood almost made me pass out. It's disturbing to me. But, I had to stay strong. I was in Monstadt, and I knew who to find if I want to survive.

And so I walked further.

After a long walk, I entered the city of Monstadt. It was good to be back. I missed this place. The air smelled of apples and the wind was stronger than any other region.

And there she was, casually walking around without a care in the world.

"Amber!!" I called out. She noticed immediately.

"Collei!" She was happy to see me. "You're back!"

"Amber!" I ran closer to her. "I uh...kinda need money."

I proceeded to chill at her house. She offered me tea and other stuff to make myself feel at home.

"Well, I could lend you a few Mora..." Amber said while putting aside her glider. "But why did you travel all this way?"

"Just a little soul searching." I didn't know what to say. "Just needed somewhere to be that was away from all of this stuff happening back home."

"What happened, Collei?" She asked so innocently of a question that has an answer which alludes blood.

"Stuff." I proceeded to drink the tea.

"Amber, where did you put my sword?" Another person came through her doors. She was tall and more fit than Amber.

"Over there, Eula." Amber responded, pointing to the cabinet. "You doing a commission?"

"Sent by Jean."

"Interesting."

As Eula was about to walk out, she noticed my presence. She was bothered, and so was I. Amber noticed the glares we both stared at one another before Eula left once and for all.

"You two really gotta get along." Amber said.

"She's a Lawrence..." I stated. "I can't trust them after they worked with the Fatui that one time."

"She's not like her family."

Pfft. Yeah right. "The Lawrence clan enslaved the people of Monstadt and threw them into fighting pits. Thank Vanessa she threw them off power."

"But that was like a bazillion years ago."

"And they still exist." Look, I don't trust her.

Amber sighed and went back to get me more tea.

"You know I care about you, right?" I told her. "You're dating her, I only hope she doesn't treat you badly."

"I understand that, Collei." She poured me a cup of tea.

"Be careful." I said. "It doesn't matter if it is frowned upon, people still break contracts."

I drank the tea she gave me.

"Do you think I grew as a person, Amber?" I asked her.

"Huh? Of course I do."

"I'm not so sure myself... I did some things a few hours ago that reminded me of how I used to act."

"How so?"

"I was mad at other people for hurting someone I cared about... So I hurt them in turn."

Amber sighed. "I'm not gonna say my feelings on the whole revenge part you're implying, but I will say that's a sign of growth. You pushed people away back then and never cared about anyone, and now here you are, caring for others and mad that they were hurt. You pushed people away back then, Collei, and now you don't. That's growth."

Somehow, Amber's speech made me feel better. And even better, the pain from the back of my neck was starting to lessen.

Still, I still can't get Gamebang's death out of my head.

But maybe I should just move on and accept that it happened. Things like that just happen.

I left the city a few minutes later, venturing out in the wild. I was hunting down a few slimes and whatnot, whatever to clear my head.

And yet I realize that the organization the Nobushi was part of isn't going to stop anytime soon. They're going to keep killing anyone on their list and more of what happened earlier will happen. More people will be like me. Blood will be spilled.

The thought made me sick.

And them, dying like that? Out of nowhere? No, I can't accept that. No. No God no. No one deserves that. They deserve living.

This isn't fair. This will never be fair.

Why do bad things happen to others?

No. No no no. I will not settle for this grave injustice.

I will drag Gamebang out of the afterlife, or whatever happens after death. That's equality achieved. And when I do, I will bathe in the blood of the NFI.

The seal on my neck began to hurt, but I didn't mind. In fact, I was starting to like it- I'm hungry.

I looked around and I was lost in a dark forest. Which was weird because it was still 9 AM. But no matter, I started looking for apples.

But suddenly...

"Agh!" I was attacked by three strange beasts. One resembled a lion, another a wolf, and the last a tiger. But they looked weird, no, they looked demonic.

They were swift and dodged every single one of my arrows. When they got close, I'd use my own arrows as a sword of some kind or a knife. The sounds they made were like crying, but not of sadness, but of pleasure.

I was scared for my life to the point my skills were basically non-existent at this time. I threw everything I got at them, but they just wouldn't die.

And the lion launched itself towards me, and I prepared for the worst.

And bam, the lion was stabbed. A figure came from the shadows and killed it. Then, another figure came and killed the other two beasts. I was saved.

"What's a young girl doing out here...?" The figure said. "How could one wish for this?"

The one who killed the lion, I couldn't tell if they were a man or a woman. But the other one that killed the others, they were certainly a man. Long ruffled hair and bags for eyes, that's what the man looked like.

"Who are you...?" I asked.

"I'm [Insert GenshinPlace member], this is Com Insydeme." They said. "And you're a girl who's about to leave this forsaken place."

They grabbed my arm. "Wait!!" I shouted. "Where are we!?"

"Doesn't matter, you're not supposed to be here."

"You said I wished for this!"

"You don't know what you want. This isn't what you want."

"Well maybe it is!" I said. "I've been searching for something all day!"

"Damn it, girl, you're only entering death."

"That's what I want!" I eventually forced myself out of their grasp. "I want to enter death!"

"You don't even know what 'here' is."

"I don't care. I will go."

This [Insert GenshinPlace member] seemed to be frustrated, until Com Insydeme spoke.

"[Insert GenshinPlace member], she seems to be quite skilled with the bow. We could use an archer on our journey."

[Insert GenshinPlace member] sighed. "Damn it." They looked at me. "Fine. You're coming with us."

Yes! "Nice! Where we going!?"

"Hell."

Jackpot.

"Why do you guys wanna go to hell?" I asked.

"Com here is a sinner." [Insert GenshinPlace member] said. "So we're going to find the Purgatorio and make him walk the path of redemption."

"I wasn't really getting anywhere in Atlantis." Com said. "Where I used to be. I feel like this is the only way."

"It's a crazy way." [Insert GenshinPlace member] stated. "But there was a mission at my PolandBall, aka my job, where someone had to enter hell for something. I took it because I had nothing better to do."

"They got tired of the princess." Com added.

"Yeah, I did." [Insert GenshinPlace member] agreed. "Two birds with one stone. I do whatever Com is saying and I get to do my job."

I realized what they said. "PolandBall?" I asked.

"Yeah, what about us."

"I..." Do I tell them? That there are people trying to kill them? Oh who am I kidding... "There's some Inazuman Nobushi trying to kill some people of PolandBall."

"What?" [Insert GenshinPlace member] looked serious. "Nobushi?"

"Yeah."

"How do you know this."

"No comment." I didn't wanna say anything...

"If this is true, then it means what Aqua is saying is coming to fruition." [Insert GenshinPlace member] said. "I gotta give headquarters a heads up before we enter hell." They began texting on their phone. I looked and it was discord. After they were done, we kept moving.

I looked up and saw a vast mountain.

"Mount Delectable." Com said. "Down on the ground somewhere, there should be a gate..."

As I stared at the mountains, I realized one thing.

Dante's fanfiction was true all along.

"Hahaha..." How absurd... I guess I wasn't an idiot for believing in it. "Hey..." I asked [Insert GenshinPlace member]. "I thought Mount Delectable didn't exist..."

"It does. It's not a physical location. What we're seeing is the product of demons. It only appears when you wish for it and are in some kind of forest, which we are."

"Found it!" Com called out. We went to him and saw a giant golden gate beneath stairs that lead deeper underground. Behind it was pure red. The closer we walked to it, the hotter the temperature got.

I read the words carved on the top of the gate.

"Abandon all hope, ye who enter here..."

"Y'all ready?" [Insert GenshinPlace member] asked. We both nodded.

[Insert GenshinPlace member] opened the gate and we entered hell.

I'm coming, Gamebang.

...

Gamebang POV

They have sent me to the 2nd layer of hell. The land where all who were consumed by lust are thrust back and forth by a terrible wind caused by a horrible storm. Basically, we're being flung around in an infinite tornado. Symbolism wise, something about the power of lust blowing needlessly and makes one's emotions go all over the place? I don't know.

We are treated to an eternity of discomfort. At some point, you stop being dizzy from all the spinning. At some point, the lightning doesn't hurt you. At some point, the rain doesn't bother you, as if you had always been wet from the day you were born.

It's disheartening. It's uncomfortable. I hate this. Which sure, it's hell.

But what really fucks me up is that I went through an entire year of trying to become a better man. An entire year in prison. I've already had my punishment, and if that wasn't it, I saw my own daughter die. What other punishment is more cruel than that? And to think, I served up my time and didn't do anything when I started that year of self improvement. I didn't orgasm once, I denied lust, I never did anything wrong afterwards, AND I STILL ENDED UP HERE!

It seemed like everyone was wrong. Everyone kept saying "Ohhhh Gamebang, you've grown so much."

Yeah, the universe disagrees. Once you do a sin, that's it. It doesn't matter if you get better or not, your life will be defined by your sins. It doesn't care for redemption, you did a bad thing and therefore you must be bad. Fuck your growth, it doesn't matter, you did something bad.

So why did I even bother trying to be better? Why? If the universe says I'll never change, then so be it. If I ever get the chance to, I'll fuck as many dogs as I want, cheat on many partners, and kill my own children. I'm already bad, I'm already in hell, why should I change? The universe saw no growth, so why bother? WHY EVEN TRY!?! WHY EVEN FUCKING TRY AT THIS POINT!?!?

"Hey, Gamebang." Kazuma was talking to me. "How's Aqua doing up there?"

"Aqua? She's doing fine as a princess."

"Is that so...?"

This is Kazuma, one of Aqua's friends who is dead. He chased after too many girls and as a result, he's here.

"This is the worst..." Another person flew by us, another one of Aqua and Kazuma's friends. "Not being humiliated..."

"She's still not used to this place after years of being dead." Kazuma said. He flew closer to her just to push her further away from us. "Go off, Darkness."

Darkness was a massive masochist. In fact, she may be more lustful than any of us here. She was willing to be enslaved and other stuff I'm too ashamed to mention.

"Didn't think you'd end up here, Gamebang." Kazuma told me.

"Yeah well, me too." I responded. "I don't think it's fair at all."

BOOM! Suddenly, the winds disappeared and we fell to the ground.

"What the fuck?" Kazuma said. "The storm is stopping..."

"ARE WE FREE!?" Darkness yelled. "ARE WE FREE TO FINALLY FULFILL OUR LUST!??!"

She then proceeded to find the nearest fat ugly bastards and beg on her knees for their cum. They undressed her and at least 4 things were in her all at once.

And you know, this isn't really what hell is for.

Whilst she was getting her bellybutton fucked, someone came up to them and forced them to stop via pain by a weapon. The ugly bastards ran while Darkness stayed, getting hit and enjoying it.

The ones who stopped them, more of those guys were coming in here. They were demons. But with actual flaming armor.

"All of you, come with us." The leader demon said.

"What's happening?" One asked.

"You're getting suited up."

"For what?" I asked.

"For war."

Chapter 3: Spiraling.

Morbius POV

"The NFI is coming, Morbius." Gwen told me. We were in the middle of a Vietnamese restaurant, and I just wanted to enjoy my meal.

"You're talking crazy again." I told her.

"No, listen! I read the last couple pages, and Gamebang went to hell!"

"Sure."

"The Nobushi is coming for you, Morbius." Gwen said. "Run while you still can."

I've given up on trying to understand her powers. So instead of insisting we are in some weird fanfic, she instead explained that her powers are looking into the past through the perspective of different people, which I thought was overpowered, until she told me she has no control over who she gets to see. I asked her once if she could see the future, and she explained she doesn't want to, or rather, doesn't want to spoil the story for herself.

I mean, she's always been right before about multiple facts. So...

"Okay, I'll believe you this time." I told her. "What do we do to prevent being killed by the FBI?"

"The NFI, you mean. And I don't know."

"The hell you mean you don't know?"

"It seems like the story is headed to a fated encounter with one. I mean, it has to, right?"

She knows everything about me and my friends, and she is so dumb. "So what you're saying is that we prepare for a fight?"

"Yeah. Wait, this can be an opportunity for you to be a hero and save the people in this restaurant!"

"What? I'm not gonna use these people like that. No." I stated. "If they're coming for us, we fight them in a secluded location where no one but us gets hurt."

What am I saying? All I wanna do is eat...

After I was done eating, me and Gwen went to some random grass fields. No one is here but us. It is summer, and the sun may as well be melting my skin off.

"So... When is this Nobushi showing up." I asked her.

"Any minute now, I can feel it in the writing..." She explained.

And sure enough, something came down from the sky. A man with a samurai sword.

"There he is!" Gwen shouted.

The man instantly started going for me. He swung his sword at me swiftly, and while I dodged every swing, my clothes are damaged.

"Why aren't you doing anything!?" I called out to Gwen.

"I don't have my guns!" She said. "You're the one who took them away from me!"

"Damn it!" I shouted before getting my hand sliced by the sword. My palm was bleeding, dripping blood into the grass. It hurt like a motherfucker. I clenched my teeth in the pain.

And that attack lowered my skills, because now my dodging became slower. While still effective, larger parts of my clothes were being torn off by the swings.

I wasn't taking this anymore. I had no choice.

"It's Morbing time..." I said before I morbed all over the Nobushi. He screamed as he dropped to the ground, covered in my morb.

Me and Gwen stood over this man. It was time to ask questions. This was her job. Gwen stepped on the man's wrist and broke it. The Nobushi screamed in agonizing pain.

"Why are you after Polandball members?" She asked. No answer.

In response, she broke his other wrist. Even if the man was in excruciating pain, he still wouldn't budge.

"Might as well do what Collei was about to do last chapter..." Gwen said before removing the man's pants- wait what was happening.

"What are you doing." I asked her.

"I'm going to cut off his dick."

"WAIT NO, PLEASE!!!" The Nobushi screamed. "I DON'T KNOW!! I GENUINELY DON'T KNOW WHY WE GO FOR POLANDBALL PEOPLE!"

"Who do we find for the answer of this question!" She asked.

"My superiors... They're in Inazuma..."

"Where in Inazuma."

"The Grand Narukami Shrine..."

"That's all the exposition we needed..." Gwen buckled the man's pants back on. "So, Morbius." She turned to me. "How about we go on a little trip to Inazuma?"

"Do we really have to?"

"Don't forget, they're after your friends too." She stated. "Eren is in Inazuma."

Shit. She's right.

"Okay then..." I reluctantly agreed. "We're going to Inazuma."

"What about him?" She pointed to the Nobushi.

"Leave him be." I told her. "One less soldier for the BBC."

"NFI." She corrected me.

"NFI. Yes, that's what I said."

...

Eren POV

"There's a lot more people in Ritou than I expected." I told Historia. "Looks like people really wanna do illegal things."

"The NFI tells us that we can let out all our temptations tonight." Historia stated. "Their reasoning is if we do all of our illegal desires tonight, the crime rate will go down."

"You know, it's easier to rent a rage room and let all your anger out there."

"Yeah but does a rage room allow you to do public sex?"

"Good point."

We walked through the streets of Ritou. All the shops are trying to capitalize on the experiment and sell whatever. Weapons and all other stuff. Weirdly though, it's mostly party equipment.

Near the docks, we see a vast amount of people. Not volunteers to participate in the experiment, but people protesting against it. They're here in the docks because a small building beside it is the place where people can sign up for participation.

You earn a reward for participating in the experiment. Money.

"I'll tell you what they want us to do! They want us to murder each other!" One of the protesters yelled.

"The experiment is receiving a large amount of participants because of the financial reward!"

"They incentive violence!" Another shouted. "Pain amongst our neighbors! In this small city!"

"We are all struggling because of them!" One was referring to the Inazuma Government. "Ever since they put down the Vision Hunt Decree, we have seen our economy crash! Without the Decree, unemployment skyrocketed! Many lost their jobs! I lost my job! I struggle financially, but even I do not fall for the NFI's monetary scheme!"

"The government has done this! And we know who's at the top! If there's anyone to blame, it's the Raiden Shogun!" Many cheered for this statement.

"And she's missing! Where is she when her people needed her!? Where is our Archon!?"

"You think they're justified to think this?" Historia asked me.

"Kinda." I answered. "The experiment is all based in one psychological study that the NFI claims. The major release of all types of temptations, such as violence, leads to those temptations being rid of. But how true is that really?"

"Don't you think it's scummy though?" Historia said. "In a time where the Inazuman population can't afford food for a week, the government promises money in exchange for what it wants to do."

"In dire times..." I explained. "People will not follow morals. People are poor and hungry. They'll do anything to eat. People aren't participating in the experiment because they believe in it, they're here for the money."

"Well... If the experiment proves to be a success, maybe this day can be an example of 'The ends justify the means.' " Historia said. "If this night truly does solve the country's problems, then I'll be damned to say the NFI was right."

The average Inazuman would be fighting for their life for a bit of money. But where I was from, it wasn't our daily routine. Konda Village was small, and was united as a community. Money wasn't a priority,

though it still existed. But survival was, and we survived without the need of monetization. If we wanted food, we'd fish. If we wanted a home, we'd build it ourselves. If we wanted love, we'd find it.

That being said, our fighting lessons from the Kamisato Estate were expensive as hell, thanks to the Inazuma economy. PolandBall doesn't have any missions fit for me, so I'm not getting much of a paycheck there. Historia and I could use the money.

Oh god, we're falling into the NFI's hands.

"Do you feel like you're keeping pent-up emotions? Feelings of rage?" The interviewer asked us. Me and Historia entered the building to enter the experiment.

"I mean, not violence I'd say." I responded. "I'm really horny all the time. Not gay though, I promise. But there are certain acts I'd like to do that are basically crimes."

"Me too." Historia answered. She was beside me.

"Are you two a couple?" The interviewer asked.

"Whaaattt???" I said. "No way!"

"Yeah!" She added alongside me. "Besides, even if we did like each other, we'd be having so much sex every night."

"Totally!" I said.

Then we both stayed silent.

"But we won't!" I said.

"Yeah!"

"Not because we're gay! Because we're not! We are straight!"

"We're definitely not gay!"

"Yup."

"...Okay then." The interviewer said.

We did the rest of the paperwork and stuff.

"And all we have to do is sign here to volunteer?" Historia asked while laying her hand on the paper laid upon the table.

"Yes. As promised, you will receive a reward of 20,000 Mora."

Me and Historia looked at each other, faces that screamed this might be immoral, but what other choice do we have? We came to Inazuma to study the Kamisato Art. To continue these lessons, we need to pay the ridiculously expensive tuition. 20k Mora would be more than enough.

Reluctantly, me and Historia signed our names on the paper. We were now participants of the experiment.

...

Obama POV

I was sitting right beside Michael's dead body, still strapped to the machine. As long as he isn't taken off it, he can still be brought back to life.

I have a few guards outside the door of this room, making sure no one enters. And just in case, I have a gun with me.

I wonder what he's doing in the Paradiso. Hanging out with good dead people. Or maybe I was mistaken and he actually went to hell. Who knows, I can't know, I'm not dead.

It is currently 12 PM. It is the afternoon.

...

Michael POV

I'm on my way with your boy MLK to pay a visit to the Empyrean and talk to whoever is in charge to make love and not war.

We exit the 2nd sphere of Heaven and end up at the 3rd, Venus. This is where all the LOVE is. Unlike the planet, this Venus isn't raining acid everywhere, though it is still very cloudy. But it's a nice flat grassland full of people who were simply good loving people. Living under a great blue sky with sunshine and rainbows.

"Look over there!" MLK told me, pointing to my right side.

I look and see Ai Hoshino, performing one of her band's songs on a stage while many watch her performance. Glad to know she ended up in Heaven.

"She's made quite a name for herself here in Venus." MLK told me. "Some people from other spheres come here sometimes to watch her. She's great."

I honestly really wanted to stay and watch her, but I spent too long at the library listening to Tolkien, so I have to keep moving.

We wander around the area for a bit and we encounter a door.

"Alright, that's our cue." MLK said before opening the door.

We exit the Venus and enter the 4th sphere of Heaven, the Sun.

It's pretty hot around here, because we're standing on the sun itself. Look up and you'll see space, and the rest of Heaven itself. Hey, I can even see Mercury from here.

The Sun is where all the smart people are. The ones with wisdom and who are wise.

We encounter Pythagoras, responsible for discovering the Pythagorean Theorem, which states that the area of the square whose side is the hypotenuse is equal to the sum of the areas of the squares on the other two side- wait what am I doing.

"Ah! Pythagoras!" MLK greeted him. "Have any wisdom for us before we take our leave from here?"

Pythagoras closed his eyes and spoke truth. "If she turns out to be a guy, you shall still give it a try. Don't let yesterday's mistakes stop you from successfully sucking your own dick."

"Wow! Such meaningful insight!" MLK's eyes sparkled. "Thank you, Pythagoras."

Um... Okay then.

We found the next door in the Sun and entered the 5th sphere of Heaven. Mars. Home to the warriors of the faith, basically righteous fighters.

Something's off about Mars. Not many people seem to be enjoying their time here and seem to be focused on working out and training combat. You'd think they would rest after a lifetime of fighting.

"All these people training were required to do so since yesterday." MLK told me.

"What do you mean?" I asked.

"People were simply enjoying their time here, not worrying about combat and being a warrior. Until the people from the Empyrean announced that they would be battling against Hell in the near future. The warriors in Mars have the job of becoming strong enough to decimate the entire realm of the Inferno, leaving only the Paradiso behind."

And that's why I've been sent here, to stop that war from happening. It seems people really are preparing for battle. Both sides really do want to destroy one another.

The safest way I can guarantee no realms being destroyed either way is to convince whoever is in charge of Heaven to stop their attack and simply defend the realm.

One of these warriors is Jaime Lannister, the Kingslayer. Who killed the Mad King to save the innocent. I'm talking about the book version, not the show, fuck the show. He seems pretty determined to defend Heaven.

It was at this time when I realized that people are going to double-die when the battle arrives. There's no afterlife for the afterlife, one will simply be reduced to nothing and stop existing. That's not death, that's something beyond it.

Hell and Heaven need to co-exist to keep the balance of the universe in check. If bad people enter Heaven, or good people enter Hell, it only means catastrophe. If only one realm exists and all types of people enter, then it's no different from living. Eventually, human nature follows and it's just another world.

I don't particularly agree with the notion of good people and bad people, I think everyone is complicated. But that's a debate for another time, I just have to make sure no realm gets destroyed.

After that whole thing, we entered the 6th sphere of Heaven, Jupiter. Where all the rulers who displayed justice are at.

Jupiter isn't solid, it's a gas giant. So the souls of all those who live here simply float around, doing their business. Sometimes, they'll form letters together.

Me and MLK aren't floating souls, so we had to take some flying mighty horses from Mars.

While we float in the gas of this sphere, many souls of righteous rulers float around us. I recognize one of them. It's Raiden Makoto, the original Electro Archon until she died 500 years ago, her role being taken by her sister Ei.

She floats around me and even offers me a cupcake. Neat!

Anyway, we exit the gas and enter the 7th sphere of Heaven, Saturn. This is where the Contemplatives end up, people who think really hard.

Interestingly, these are also people involved with the battle against the Inferno.

These people are thinking about how to defend Heaven and destroy Hell. I could tell because their thoughts are on full display for one another in some weird floating bubble as if they were in a comic. This is happening because corporative teamwork purposes. I guess the people in Saturn are the battle strategists for what's to come.

Surprisingly, Harambe is here.

He's thinking real fuckin hard. His thought bubble is showing some neat stuff about battles and shit.

Anyway, enter the 8th Sphere, the Fixed Stars. I don't have time to explain the outdated scientific facts this place is all about, but it's kind of outside the solar system and you can see Earth from here.

It's full of bright glowing souls who were the most holy of all holiness. These are were the coolest people hang out.

Me and MLK climb a giant ladder upwards to traverse this sphere. The souls around us float around and do stuff.

"Hey." MLK called to me. "Have you noticed we both got more handsome with each sphere we entered?"

"No? I mean, I don't have a mirror with me." I answered.

"Well, it is true! The closer we are to the Empyrean, the prettier we get!"

Wow, who needs beauty products when you could just go to Heaven.

Anyway, we climbed the ladders high enough to reach a cloud we now stand upon, containing the gate to the 9th sphere, the Primum Mobile. The gate was large and golden, brimming with glory.

A gate guard tells us. "If you wish to enter the land of the angels, answer my three questions."

"They don't usually allow free entrance. We'll have to get through this." MLK whispered to me.

"What is Faith, Hope, and Love?" The guard asked.

"Go off Michael." MLK told me to answer the questions.

"Um..." I was taking my time thinking of a good answer. "Faith is belief in something no matter what situation. Whether there's proof or not, one always believes. That's Faith.

Hope is looking at the bright side of things, believing what will happen in the future will be good.

And Love is the final wisdom. The ultimate and highest goal man can aspire. Love is what holds us together and will be what makes us move forward."

I learned alot about love during the Collapse of Time. I knew exactly how to answer that.

"Good." The guard said.

The gate soon opened and we were able to enter.

The 9th sphere of Heaven, the Primum Mobile. The home of the angels.

Me and MLK stand above 9 gigantic rings, each containing angel stuff. But we aren't gonna explore the rings, we're just gonna head straight for the center of this place.

The rings all spin around our destination, The Empyrean.

Me and MLK use our mighty Mars horses to float past the rings.

The angels here are also preparing for battle.

There are also some funky freaky looking angels as well, such as the Seraphim and the Thrones. They look like Dark Souls bosses. I ain't describing them, it's best if you google 'Biblically Accurate Angel' and see how horrifying these things are. I see nothing holy about two burning rings with multiple eyes.

The closer we move to the Empyrean, the brighter everything gets. I'm surprised I haven't gone blind at this point.

And at long last, our bodies are transported to a place beyond physical existence. I have arrived at the highest point in the Paradiso. The Empyrean.

It's...bright. Pure white. It's all I see, except a weird puddle on the ground, glowing colors I've never seen before.

"Alright." MLK took some water from the puddle into his hands. "Let's drink." He began to chug down on that shit like he just graduated.

I can't believe you have to drink from a puddle to see what the Empyrean actually looks like.

Anyway, I do the same as MLK and
WOOOOAOAHABSBBDHWHBFJDJJDHDBZBJEJWJEBJEIEJRNJDJXJDJND

It's not that impressive as I thought. The puddle became the floor and angels stand around us. There's a giant rose above us which has some pretty holy people. And also a shit ton of children because before Jesus was born every child was guaranteed a spot in the big rose. Now if children aren't circumcised, they end up in Hell instead. Thanks Jesus.

Actually, wait, does Jesus even exist in this universe?

Well, never mind that! Above the big rose is GOD!

WOOOOOOOOO, LETS SEE WHAT HE LOOKS LIKE!

God is three circles occupying the same space. At the center of those circles in some random book, no one knows what it is. Oh and rainbows surround the book.

...

Yeah that's it. That's God.

"Well... We're here!" MLK told me. "Say what you want to God! We can't stay here forever, you know."

"Oh, right..." I said.

What do I even say to God? The creator of all thin- actually no, that was Azathoth. But still, I'm pretty nervous. This is the God of our universe.

"Um... Hi, your grace..." I said.

"Omg who tf are you???" God said, in the most high pitched female voice I could have never expected. "I'm playing minecraft, make this quick."

Um. That wasn't as I thought it was, but I'll go along with it. "Why... um..." Okay, I'm genuinely baffled at this point.

"NOOO!!" God screamed.

"A CREEPER KILLED ME AND DESTROYED MY HOME!!!"

"H-Hey. Um..." I was genuinely trying to think of something to say. "So about the wa-"

"FUCK IT ALL!" God screamed. "I'M GOING TO FIND THAT CREEPER'S FAMILY AND FUCKING GANG-RAPE EACH MEMBER INDIVIDUALLY! THEN, I'LL KILL THEM! YES! THAT'S WHAT I'LL DO!"

...Jesus.

"Isn't their words so holy..." MLK said, tears in his eyes, as if this was the most beautiful thing he'd ever heard.

"W-Wha, she just said the most fucked shit I've ever heard!" I told MLK.

"I don't know bout you, but those words were truly immaculate..."

Next thing you knew, God was playing Genshin Impact and screaming racial slurs whenever an enemy hit their character. Interestingly, they had an Archon team. I couldn't see it, but I kept hearing "Time for takeoff!" And "I will have order!" And "Inazuma shines eternal!" And lastly... "Share in my knowledge!"

"Hey, guy from below!" God called me. "Don't you agree Zhongli is the hottest character in the game?"

At some level, I feel like I'm required to agree with GOD themselves. "Yeah... I do."

"Great!" They continued playing the game. I could hear them finishing up a domain for artifacts. "Yall, should I pull for Scaramouche?"

"Please don't-"

"Okay, here I go!" I heard them click the wish button. I couldn't see anything, so I had to rely on their reactions.

"Come on..." God was clicking past the 3 star weapons the single 4 star character they got.

Until. "WHAT, ARE YOU FUCKING KIDDING ME?? A KEQING??"

"Hey, that's not a bad thing, you know?" I told God. "Keqing can be really go-"

"I HATE KEQING! I HATE CATS! I HATE THIS FUCKING GAME!! THIS GAME IS ASS! HOW DARE THEY MAKE ME LOSE A 50/50, I AM THE GOD OF THE FUCKIN UNIVERSE! AAAAHHHHH!!!"

As they screamed, God fell from the book and landed in front of me.

I finally saw God's true form.

A high school girl.

Legit, she was shorter than me and looked 16 years old.

As they were in front of me, they started violently moving on the ground because they were mad about the genshin thing.

"Hey..." I went to her. "Want some water to calm yourself?" I offered her the water that was on the ground.

She scoffed, but then reluctantly took it and drank. She was beginning to be more reserved.

Hey, maybe this is the right time. I began to ask them.

"So... God-"

"Call me Haruhi." God said. "I feel more comfortable with my real name."

"Okay... Haruhi. What can I do to stop you from going to war with Hell?"

And then, her face went red with pure rage. "NOTHING! HELL THINKS THEY'RE BETTER THAN US! WE NEED TO NOT ONLY SHOW THEM WHO'S BOSS, BUT ALSO BURN THEM ALL WITH THEIR OWN FIRE! KILL THEM ALL! KILL THEM ALL!"

... This is gonna be harder than saving the multiverse.

...

Collei POV

The 1st layer of Hell is Limbo. This is the place where absolutely nothing happens. People just stay here and stuff.

In this barren red land with brown rock for ground, it smells like nothing and is almost silent.

There's a ton of people here who are simply sitting down and uh doing nothing.

People who end up down here aren't that bad, most of the time it's a technicality thing, like being born before Jesus or something.

"You spot what you're looking for down here?" [Insert GenshinPlace member] asked me.

I looked around. No Gamebang, just sitting people. "No." I answered.

"Then let's keep moving."

This place is perfect for my social anxiety, because people are too busy doing nothing as opposed to watching me walk away from them. I get nervous when people look at me. They're all staring at the ground, this is great!

"Oop, there it is." Com said. We found a hole in the ground, with stairs that lead downward. "Let's go."

We walked down the stairs. The walls around us were a little too close to our own shoulders for comfort, not small enough to crush us, but that fear never disappeared.

But once we reached the bottom of the stairs, we entered the 2nd Layer of Hell, Lust.

Which... No one is here?

"Wow, No Nut November must've really helped alot of people." Com said.

"I doubt it." [Insert GenshinPlace member] prepared their weapon. "This must be why they sent me down here."

Even the storm that flew people around was gone. It was just as empty and barren and the 1st layer.

"Next stairs should be near. Let's keep walking." [Insert GenshinPlace member] said.

As we were walking, I tried to make conversation.

"So... Purgatorio, huh." I told Com. "That exists?"

"Yup. If I go there, I will finally find redemption." Com answered.

"So there's Heaven, Hell, and the Purgatory?"

"Yeah, but Purgatory isn't really used."

"How so?"

"In death, the universe believes in good and bad, not redemption. Purgatory is redemption after death. That can't happen, so it's locked away by the devil."

"Then... How are you getting to it?"

"I don't know, but I have faith." Com said with optimism. "I've done a lot of things I regret. I want to be a better man. The Purgatorio is one of my options. I will not give up on it."

I wasn't gonna lie, that was inspiring. "Where is the Purgatorio anyway?"

"According to Dante's fanfiction, there's an entrance at the very bottom of hell."

"Hey, you two." [Insert GenshinPlace member] called us. They were ahead. "Found the stairs. Let's go."

Me and Com stopped talking and went down to the 3rd circle of hell, Gluttony.

Before we entered, [Insert GenshinPlace member] brought out an umbrella from their pocket and opened it. This is because it's raining all the time in the 3rd circle of Hell. The rain is powerful and can strip someone of all their clothes in a second.

This time, the people are actually here and just sad that it's raining. The people long for sun and grass. Also, they're naked.

"Well, at least it can't get any worse." Com said before we saw that multiple people started running away from the direction we were heading to, seemingly in a panic.

[Insert GenshinPlace member] prepares their gun and we keep moving past the panicked runners. I prepare my bow and Com prepares his pistol.

Suddenly, BAM! A giant monstrous three-headed beast landed in front of us. It looked similar to a dog.

"Cerberus..." [Insert GenshinPlace member] said. "The Hound of Hades..."

In Cerberus' mouth were a few gluttonous people of this 3rd circle, torn to bloody shreds and their guts falling to the ground. Splashing, making a pool of blood.

"Don't worry, they usually regenerate every bazillion years." [Insert GenshinPlace member] explained. "However, unlike them, we are not dead yet."

[Insert GenshinPlace member] started shooting the beast at the same time we were all running. They managed to hit the eye of the beast, but this pissed them off because now it's specifically chasing us.

As I'm running, I shoot as many of my arrows at it as humanly possible, infusing it with Dendro. But the sheer fear I feel when looking at this giant dog chasing us with blood on its teeth makes me cry. I'm scared. A monster is chasing us and is going to kill us. I can't even run properly from how scared I am.

But I keep shooting the arrows because I want to live! I keep shooting and running because I have something to keep going for. Someone. I don't want to be scared, I want to be strong! So I want to learn!

Look at it, Collei. Look at its devilish eyes. Aim, hold and steady. Don't let the tears blur your vision. Look at it, and don't stop looking. It's a monster, and you will face it. Aim... Target locked.

Now, shoot.

The arrow flew with every bit of dendro energy I could give it. In an instant, it hit the beast's eye. Cerberus is a creature bound of fire. Dendro plus Pyro only means...

BOOM! The Hound's eye exploded into fire, temporarily blinding it. As it cried, it gave up on its chase and wept on the ground.

"Good job, girl." [Insert GenshinPlace member] told me.

I did it! I felt proud of doing that! Yeah! This is great! Even when I was so afraid, I did it successfully!

I start laughing out of relief and joy.

As Gamebang once told me.

"Can a man still be brave if he is afraid? That is the only time a man can be brave."

He was right!

"There! The stairs!" Com yelled.

We went down and into the next circle of Hell.

We enter the 4th circle, Greed.

Its pretty anticlimactic compared to Gluttony. People move large rocks and try to hurt each other. But the rocks are heavy as heck, so they barely do anything.

"Let them do their thing. We need to head deeper." [Insert GenshinPlace member] said. And so, we kept moving while everyone was moving rocks.

Surprisingly, some people actually did get squashed by rocks. Most of the time, it's because they were tired of pushing theirs and took a small rest before someone else squashed them. But again, no one double dies in the afterlife, so they'll regenerate in like a billion years.

"Ah, here we are." [Insert GenshinPlace member] spoke. "The 5th circle of Hell."

In front of us laid an enormous green lake. The left and right sides stretched beyond what I could see, that's how large it was. But I could see the other side in front of us.

The waters are pretty intense. The people who's sin were Wrath are constantly battling one another inside the water. An eternal fistfight.

"How do we cross it?" Com asked.

"Hold on..." [Insert GenshinPlace member] said before going to one of the people in the 4th circle and stealing someone's large rock that was conveniently shaped like a refrigerator, though not completely. I'm trying to describe a pure rectangle.

[Insert GenshinPlace member] brought it back. "Hop on."

Me and Com got on the rock and [Insert GenshinPlace member] pushed it into the lake. They hopped on immediately as it made contact with the water. And off we went to the 6th circle.

As we were moving along above the eternal Super Smash Bros match in the lake beneath us, we were getting pretty wet since everyone fights so aggressively. The water wasn't anything special other than being green.

"Hey!" One guy was purposely splashing water at us. "Don't be a pussy! Fight me!"

"Fuck off." [Insert GenshinPlace member] told them.

"How dare you!" His splashing got more furious.

I looked to the guy who was annoying us and...

"You're..." I was stunned. "You're Lord Lawrence."

"Damn right I am!"

"You died a thousand years ago during Vennessa's Rebellion against the Lawrence clan..."

"A thousand years it has been? Ah, Monstadt must be worse now without my family at the top."

"Actually." I already hated this guy. "It's a lot better without you guys. Slavery isn't a thing and people are free to do as they please."

"Psshhh." Lord Lawrence scoffed. "It's all because of those Children of Murata. Vennessa..."

I couldn't help but ask this. "What's your opinion on black people."

"Fuckin hate them. They're the ones I always target down here."

"As expected." I wasn't surprised. The Lawrence Clan enslaved people of Natlan who resided in Monstadt. Vennessa was one of them. If it weren't for the Anemo Archon, the children of Murata would've truly forgotten their history.

"Doesn't look like you're fond of these guys." Com pointed out to me.

"The Lawrence Clan is evil." I told Com. "They should've been wiped years ago."

"One day, my family will rule Monstadt again. That is our birth right!" Lord Lawrence shouted.

I was tired of hearing this man's irritating voice. I pulled out my bow and pointed the arrow at him. "Shut the fuck up."

"Woah woah woah, Collel." Com was trying to stop me with words. "We're almost to the 6th circle, calm down, we don't need to join their fight. This is their punishment."

"It's not good enough for this sack of shit." I told Com.

The pain at the back of my neck started increasing, but I didn't want it to stop. I liked it. The pain gives me strength. The desire to eradicate those who harm the people I care about.

The Lawrence Clan hurt Vennessa, and if she didn't win the Rebellion, Amber and all my other friends wouldn't be here. Monstadt would've rejected me like everyone else if it was still ruled by these disgusting vile men who deserve to rot more rather than swim.

"Hahaha..." The pain was burning my neck, but I let it. Give it to me. More strength.

He cannot die twice, so I'll make sure to unravel true Hell to him as I bathe in his blood.

I smile.

I shot the arrow through Lord Lawrence's eye. He screamed in pain, but then laughed. I started laughing too.

He charged for me and tried to get on our rock, but I took one of my arrows in hand, infused it with dendro, and stabbed his neck. My eyes don't leave his. I use all my pained strength to move the arrow through his neck.

By the time I was done, I had beheaded him.

Punishment. It felt good. I wasn't done. No, there needed to be more. He deserved so much more than this.

"Yes..." The voice in my head spoke. It was from the monsters in the seal of my neck. *"Use our strength and devour all those who stand before you. Embrace the power, Collei. Feel their blood on your tongue..."*

Hahaha... That will taste better than Amber's tea.

"COLLEI!" Com pulled me closer to the center of the rock and shook me repeatedly. "What the hell is going on with you!?"

Suddenly, the pain in my neck disappeared, and it was as if I regained consciousness. I saw the arrow I was holding. It was covered in blood, and so was my hand. I remember what happened.

"EEP!" I got scared of its sight and threw it to the water. But then the blood in my hands was still there.

I get light-headed when I see blood.

"C-Com..." I made him hold me up and make sure I don't fall. I was getting dizzy. "Help me..."

And then, I fell unconscious.

And all the while, the pain in my neck increased. It wasn't much, but it still hurt like a pinch.

...

Com Insydeme POV

Collei laid asleep in my arms, she would've fallen headfirst into the stone if it weren't for me. Something about her seemed different when she was talking to whoever the guy in the water was. It all happened in an instant, I couldn't react. And [Insert GenshinPlace member] didn't really care, they just kept rowing our ride.

There was blood on my arms, but I assumed it came from the man she killed. But then more and more came out and I feared it was hers. I gently placed her body on the ground and analyzed it, trying to find where the bleeding was, or whether it was my own.

It was hers, and it came from the back of her neck. It wouldn't stop bleeding. It had a strange symbol I had never seen before, but it expressed protection, but I think it's failing. I ripped a part of my clothes and covered the symbol, trying to stop the bleeding.

But then, our ride shook like an earthquake. Our little stone boat had hit land.

"Come on." [Insert GenshinPlace member] said, getting off the rock and onto solid ground. "We are entering the city of Dis."

I had no choice but to carry Collei on my back.

Dis is guarded by a giant stone wall, usually guarded by Fallen Angels who send Furies to hurt whoever isn't allowed to enter.

But like, there's nobody here. No Fallen Angels or Furies. No one.

"The guards have left their station to prepare for the upcoming war." [Insert GenshinPlace member] explained. "Things are escalating fast. We need to move faster. Come on."

We both started walking faster than usual. Collei wasn't heavy, she was actually pretty light, so she wasn't much of a burden.

We go past the large wall and enter the city of Dis, where the 6th circle of Hell is, aka Heresy. The people here are punished to lay in flaming tombs. That's basically it. There might be people I recognize here, but I don't recognize any of them because their entire bodies are burnt to oblivion.

As we walk through these burning coffins, my thoughts begin to wander.

I went on this mission with [Insert GenshinPlace member] because it basically told me that Purgatory existed. It is where the soul is cleansed of all sins and impurities. I want to be redeemed for all that I have done.

I kidnapped and threatened the lives of Atlantic Politicians, I teamed with Alizeh and brought upon the rise of the Collapse of Time all for my selfish desires, and I betrayed Michael's trust...

Because of my contribution to Alizeh's mission, an infinite number of lives were killed in the multiverse. Some, are still recovering from the damages. The Court of Azathoth still rains corpses.

And after Polandball fixed that whole thing and killed Alizeh, I went into hiding. For months, I traversed the ocean, forever weighed by my guilt. At times, I thought of letting go and just drowning myself. But then I'd be afraid of Hell, because I knew it existed. I wasn't a believer, no, Alizeh told me it did. She knew more about this world than anyone, yet she was misguided and a fool to her own guilt.

And I have become like her.

But not in this aspect. Look at me now. Instead of trying to make an impossible fantasy real, I try to accept reality for what it is. My problems are my own, and I will let them follow me until my death, but until then, I can hope that my debt will be paid, and these sinful chains will be released from my back. That's what I try to do everyday, and whatever opportunity presents itself, I take it. I was afraid of Hell, but now I am fearless. My determination to be sorry powers beyond all. I want to change for the better.

And I can't help but feel like I'm doing something good by carrying this girl on my back. No matter what, I want to protect others from now on. Which is why I will protect her.

At last, we enter the 7th circle of Hell, Violence. Another lake, filled with people. The lake is boiling blood, and the people are screaming silently. You lose your voice after screaming non-stop for hundreds of years.

While [Insert GenshinPlace member] goes back to the 6th to steal a coffin for us to use as a boat, I contemplate while staring at the people being boiled into unimaginable pain.

This is the things I always thought I deserved. I'd wish for it, everyday when I was in hiding, not knowing living was worse than any punishment Hell can give. But it is also the most giving punishment, because you will still be offered the chance for redemption. The hardest punishment is living, and the hardest thing to do is to truly understand yourself and do the right thing, paying your debt and going on the road to redemption. And in the end, I did accept help and I did want to get better, that's why I am here. And I'll stop to fulfill the words. "You reap what you sow."

Anyway, [Insert GenshinPlace member] got that coffin and we sailed across. Not much happened other than the blood was steaming and smelled bad.

The thing about the 7th circle is that its divided into 3 rings.

The blood lake was the first one, for the people who commit violence against thy neighbors.

After crossing the blood lake, we find ourselves in the 2nd ring of the 7th circle. It's a forest full of sharp poisonous trees.

Another thing to note is that the trees have faces, and they're all crying. These trees are the people who committed violence against themselves, aka suicide.

I can't help but feel sad for all of these trees. They never got the same help I did and probably did things less worse than what I did, and received nothing while I received everything they should've. I just want to comfort all of these trees, one by one, to stop their tears.

But I can't, they're doomed to be like this forever. In the grand eternity, they will remain weeping.

I'm lucky. I just wish I'd give someone else here that luck.

[Insert GenshinPlace member] brought out their umbrella again once we were heading into the last ring in the 7th circle, Violence against God, art, and nature. Basically, this is where people who do blasphemy go.

Also, I think this is where gay people end up.

The 3rd ring is a giant desert full of raining fire. A bit extreme for gay people, but okay.

Weirdly though, I saw a little sign on the ground.

It read: "Reserved for Eren Yeager, the gayest motherfucker alive."

Weird, I always thought that guy was straight. He must have hid it so well.

We exit the 7th circle of Hell and enter the 8th cir- we stand in front of a giant impassable cliff where the other side isn't visible at all. Look down and all you'll see is darkness. This giant crater in the ground has stopped our progress because we will die if we fall down there.

"Crud." [Insert GenshinPlace member] was annoyed. "How are we gonna get down there."

...

Gamebang POV

Prince of Hell, Beelzebub, is gathering people from different circles to join the Inferno Army to fight against the Paradiso. We, the people of the 2nd circle, were gathered because we'd make great human shields apparently. Fuckin hell.

Beelzebub is creepy looking. A combination of every bug and insect into one giant beast. Ten wings and twenty arms.

Beelzebub gathered people from the other circles too. He's gathered some people from the 5th because they fight all the time. Not all of them though, some fight really badly and he wanted good forces.

Right now, we are in the 8th circle of Hell. The army of the 2nd and 5th and a few demons who were supposed to be working, and every single Fallen Angel are following Beelzebub wherever he goes. We're heading straight into the Center of Hell, but Beelzebub has to gather an army first.

The 8th circle is notoriously full of worthy soldiers in each Bolgia, minus the tax collectors and politicians. The 8th has Sorcerers and thieves and Alchemists, pretty neat additions to an army.

Beelzebub gathers every single one of these guys by stopping the punishment they're going through and forcing them to come with him. And so, we move further and further into Hell.

I will not mention a specific part of the 8th that is like really fucked. Look it up on Wikipedia if you want.

Anyway, we exit the 8th circle with an army larger than ever. We stand before a giant cliff which erupts a big wall, larger than anything I have seen so far in Hell. The Wall contains chained up Giants, and Beelzebub sets these creatures free at last.

After that, the Giants help us get down from the big ass cliff. When they were done getting the entire army down, they joined us.

And so, we enter the 9th circle of Hell. Treachery.

Reserved for the worst of the worst, which according to Dante were traitors. Actually, some of these guys were really good killers and Beelzebub knew he needed them for his army.

These guys in the 9th circle are stuck in a giant frozen lake. That's basically it.

Beelzebub sets these sinners free at long last by breathing fire onto the ice. Beelzebub speaks.

"You are required to join our cause, for war is coming. Deny and you shall be erased."

Erased is different from death. Death is what happened to every single one of us here. Death leads to an afterlife. But erase is quite literally erasing existence itself. It's basically double-death.

To put it simply, when we die we still have a soul that exists. Destroy that soul and you're gone. Like, just gone. Where do you end up? Nowhere. You're gone. It's nothingness. You don't exist anymore. You lay in nothing, you are nothing.

So suddenly, everyone who was dead is feeling the threat of dying again. Neat.

Me and Kazuma have been right next to each other the whole trip, talking about the sights we saw. Darkness stood behind us, constantly getting punished on purpose by the demons.

"Well, at least this is better than an eternity of the same thing over and over." Kazuma said.

"They don't believe in redemption." I said. "It wouldn't matter if I followed them or not, I will always be a sinner in their eyes. No matter what I do to be better."

"Hey man, don't let it get to you."

"How can I not!" I said in venomous fury. "After everything! Everything I tell you! I've been through so much! And this is where I end up! Nothing matters, we are what we are. Nothing changes, so we might as well eat as many apples as we want from the tree of knowledge, it doesn't matter."

Kazuma sighed. "Did I ever tell you about Jaime Lannister?"

"You don't need to. I read the Game of Thrones books so many times." I said, forgetting my anger because I'm a huge fanboy.

"Jaime is in Heaven." Kazuma told me. "But before that, he laid in the 7th circle of Hell, in its 1st ring. Boiled in blood and fire."

"My boy never deserved that."

"But he persevered." Kazuma explained. "He escaped the blood lake and was on the run from multiple beasts and Fallen Angels. For an entire century, he spent his days being hunted. But he was always heading for one goal, the center of Hell."

"Ah, I see where this is headed." Remember, I taught Collei about the Divine Comedy. I know this place well. "Jaime went under the center and entered Purgatory."

"Correct. He spent decades in the Purgatorio, atoning for his sins and becoming a better man. And he did."

"Well, he's one of my favorite characters in Game of Thrones, so I am very glad he ended up in Heaven."

"Jaime is treated as some kind of myth here. It's been so long since it happened that no one is sure if it even happened. But I believe it." Kazuma stated, with hope in his eyes. "The universe does believe in redemption, one just has to find it and fight for it. The same way Jamie did."

Purgatory huh...

It's located beneath the center of hell, underneath all the frozen lake and fire. Which is where we are heading right now.

We're...so close to Purgatory, if it even exists. I doubt it because the universe has been cruel to me today.

But...this feeling in my heart radiates hope.

This feeling to live, the gift Alizeh gave me.

...

Here we are, the center of the 9th circle. The center of Hell itself.

A giant hole is in the ice, and what stands within it, looking down on all of us is him. The worst sinner of all.

The Devil.

It stood in its hideous red form, three heads chewing on people I didn't know. Although one of them seemed familiar. Its horns, sharper than ice. The wings, black and bloody. Its torso, filled with worms. His color, blood and black, almost as if he was burnt not by the fire, but by the ice.

And its unholy voice was released. "Son."

"Father." Beelzebub kneeled. "I have brought to you an army."

"Very good, Bub."

Suddenly, Beelzebub's entire body shook as if it was embarrassed. "D-Dad! I told you not to call me that! My friends are here!" He was referring to the Fallen Angels.

"Oh come on, son." The devil gave Beelzebub a headpat. "I just wanna show everyone how awesome you are!"

"Shut up!"

"What the fuck is going on." I said.

Suddenly, the devil's demonic voice...disappeared? He sounded more...young?

Suddenly, one of the eyes on the devil disappeared and turned to black. Out of the darkness came a uh teenage boy.

The boy came closer to Beelzebub's feet since teenagers are small compared to ancient beasts. The boy hugged Beelzebub's feet. "You're a good boy, Bub... Good boy..."

"D-Dad!" Bub was flustered.

After that whole ordeal, the boy who was apparently Satan flew to the top of his devil body and stood above all, and prepared a speech.

"Demons and sinners!" The devil shouted. "Today, we finally go head to head against the land of Paradise!"

The demons cheered while we were just silent.

"For too long, the people of the Empyrean have kept in suffering! And not only that, they constantly think they're better than us! No, we are better! We reign fire!"

"WOOOOOOO!!" The demons screamed.

"Let me tell you all! Once we enter Heaven, we will not attack the soldiers, no, we will head straight to the Empyrean!"

"YOOOO THATS A FIRE PLAN!" One of the Fallen Angels cheered.

"AND ONCE WE ENTER THE EMPYREAN, WE WILL FACE GOD HERSELF INSTANTLY!"

Herself? It's a woman?

"AND ONCE GOD COMES DOWN, OH YOU WILL NOT BELIEVE WHAT WE WILL DO!"

Demons and Fallen Angels were laughing and cheering, eager in anticipation for what the devil is going to say. What evil plans he has to finally win against the Paradiso.

"YOU WILL ALL SURROUND ME AND HER, THE DEVIL AND GOD FACE TO FACE AT LONG LAST!"

"YEAHHH!!" They all cheered.

"AND THEN!" The devil was proudly proclaimed. "I WILL ASK FOR HER HAND IN MARRIAGE!"

"..." I said.

"..." The demons and Fallen Angels said.

"..." The sinners said.

"Dad... Please stop." Beelzebub quietly begged.

"All of you will play 'A thousand years' by Christina Perri after she accepts my proposal and we dance in the Empyrean." The devil had a childish look on their face, blinded by love. "It will be just swell... I've always dreamed on this moment ever since the Rebellion." He began acting out as if he was in a play. "I did all I could to get her attention. I only wanted to be her favorite! I loved her! I...well, hehe..." Oh god this is humiliating. "I have a crush." He giggled like some school girl.

"And uh..." One of the Fallen Angels asked. "What happens if she rejects your proposal."

"Uh... I haven't thought that far. But I doubt that will happen!"

"She literally sent you to Hell." One demon said.

"She was playing hard to get, don't worryyyy."

"Dude," Azazel said. He was one of the veteran Fallen Angels. "She's technically your mom. Doesn't that sound-"

"Shut up!" The devil screamed like a child.

This...isn't a war. No.

This is pathetic.

Chapter 4: Love is the answer.

Michael POV

"Please, Haruhi!" I begged her. We were sitting in some weird little pocket dimension she made, which was designed like a Mcjayedonalds. She was eating a Keqing burger. "If you go to war, then you risk hundreds of souls being erased! That's double-death! But this time, they go to nothing!"

"Don't care. L + ratio + Freddie Mercury better." Haruhi said. This little...

"Listen to me, damn you!"

"Look, I don't need these little problems in my life. I ain't letting the toxicity affect me. Smh, go away, I have a war to prepare for."

"Do you not have any regard for your people!? You're putting the afterlife at risk!"

"Don't worryyy, nothing bad is gonna happen."

I was genuinely frustrated. "Do you have no love for this universe and its creatures!?"

"Love." Haruhi said with utter disgust. "What good does love do. It only brings pain."

"What are you saying?"

"Love kills, Jackson."

"Do you have some kind of tragic backstory to share?"

"Actually, I do. Sit back, I'm about own this bitch." Haruhi moved her hands around, it sparkled a story.

...

Once upon a time, a girl attended a little high school. She was stranger than others, wanting to believe in the supernatural to make life more interesting. Life was boring, as she made it to be.

The girl was the Goddess of everything, created at the big bang and formed the laws and structure of our universe. The stars in the sky, the void we exist in, the emotions we feel and the dangers and joys around us, she made it all. She was a righteous Goddess, a fair Goddess.

Most of the time.

Anyway.

She wanted to create singular world. Something special. She created life.

And to honor one's life, she created the afterlife. The Paradiso, the land of rest. With living creatures, they can function in ways she can never imagine. Life was extraordinary, because they had her arms and her legs, her head and her torso. It was her.

And she gave her angels in the Paradiso a similar form to this as well. But she gave them wings and swords to play around with. She loved them, and they loved her.

Then, Lucifer came along. He was acting more wild than the others, playing with chaos. Almost as if he was trying to become an equal to her. It felt insulting. She created him, how can he think he is the same as her?

She got mad. The second emotion ever felt in the universe after bliss was anger.

When Lucifer gathered an army to make his being equal to hers, she struck down and sent them all to a new dimension she had created. The Inferno.

The third emotion ever felt in the universe was regret.

She felt like this was too big of a punishment. Too harsh. A land of flame for them.

So to make up for her guilt, she created the Purgatorio. A way for these men to come back into the Paradiso, with their debt paid and their souls cleansed. For the first time, morality was created.

The thing is, none of the men ever came back. No, they stayed down there. They created their own kingdom.

The Goddess began to see life take on its own journeys. It's own trials and tribulations. It moved on its own, and she had no say in what it did.

Eventually, the life on Earth began to take its own steps too.

And she watched these humans. She saw the dark sides and the light sides. The wars and blessings. The deaths and the saving. Civilization was made, a concept she didn't make herself. Humanity made it.

And humans weren't the only ones, but they were the first. More Civilizations and societies formed throughout the universe, through different species. This was life, they were their own Gods.

It was beautiful, she thought. And she saw many people create mental connections with one another. Companionship. Love.

And suddenly, she felt lonely. She was the Goddess of everything and loved everything, and her creations who knew her existence loved her too. But they loved her because she was a deity.

On Earth, people loved each other for inexplicable reasons beyond understanding. It didn't matter what it was, they loved each other.

She wanted to know what that love felt like.

And to know love is to be human.

She had felt the universe was functioning enough to work on its own, so it doesn't need her anymore.

And thus, Haruhi was born. No memories of her time as a deity. She was just a normal girl.

Except she wasn't. Her powers remained because you cannot get rid of the ability that created the universe. But she never knew these powers existed, no. She was blind to herself.

But she went along with life just fine.

She participated in life's paths. She had her own now.

And then, it was boring.

Everything was boring. Her mortal life wasn't special, it was just another person. She wanted to be special in this world. Of course, she never knew she was God.

And so, in Haruhi's high school days, she acted strange. Believing in the supernatural for the sake of adding spice to her life. Humans are boring, what about aliens?

What she never knew was that by purely believing in it, she could make it. By wishing for it, she could bring it into existence. And it would be disguised as another normal moment in life. This was the will of God.

And thus came Kyon, a boy in her class. And suddenly, God felt romantic love.

They did lots together, and he helped her become a better person since she was pretty bratty and annoying. She opened a little club in her school, Kyon being a member. And once more people joined, suddenly, she had friends. People she genuinely cared for.

And amidst this boring existence, as long as she was with these people, it can be bearable.

Which is why when Lucifer tried to break into the Paradiso again, Haruhi was approached by the angel Gabriel, Haruhi discovered her status as a God.

Lucifer later discovered that Haruhi laid in the floors of Earth, and prepared for an invasion. Haruhi wouldn't let this slide, she'd protect her friends to the very end. It didn't matter if they found out what she really was, as long as they were alive, it was okay.

In the middle of the school courtyard, she purposely used her powers for the first time in years. Then, the demons came from the ground. Haruhi didn't let the angels come with her, she'd do this herself.

But she was still in her mortal form, and she couldn't have possibly known if Kyon and her friends would've passed by the school, getting caught in the crossfire.

She was doing a real good job at keeping the demons at bay and back to Hell, but once her friends were there, she lost control and her objective changed to purely protect them. This caused the demons to gain an advantage, as she was busy on the defense.

She can't fight and protect at the same time. Her friends watched her get hit, bleed and struggle. But yet, no matter how much mortal blood she'd drop, she couldn't stop the demons from killing her friends. She tried and tried and tried, but maybe her tears blurred her vision, not allowing her to fight properly.

With her friends to ashes, Kyon was left. Her body was injured as a tree in a typhoon. She had to protect him, he's all she had left. Nothing mattered, she'd destroy this entire universe for him.

And then, she fell to the ground. Exhausted, weakened. The demons see an advantage, and got ready to kidnap her to the Inferno.

Kyon jumped in front of her and fought the demons, trying to protect Haruhi. Each hit he'd make, his skin would burn. These creatures were beyond his ability, but for the sake of this bleeding girl, he'd bleed just as much for her.

But he was only human, it didn't take minutes for him to fall.

As he laid on the ground, Haruhi regained consciousness. Once she saw his wounded body, the hesitation broke.

She used an unimaginable amount of power to cast the demons back from whence they came, and closed their pathway to Earth, leaving them in Hell for good. And she made sure to give the message to Lucifer, for she had skinned his minions alive.

She went back to Kyon, who was at his final breaths. She had the ability to heal him, and she was about to, but Kyon stopped her. She asked him why, and he answered that she desired to be a mortal, loss is part of being human. You'll lose the part of yourself that is human if you can control every situation.

And she questioned him, how did he know that?

Turns out, he always knew. He knew she was a deity. Based on research and observation of the strange things that would happen when he was around her. Her friends knew too.

And yet, that didn't change who she was in his eyes. Haruhi was Haruhi.

He told her, it's okay, this is fine.

And then, Kyon closed his eyes.

Almost immediately after crying, Haruhi ascended to the heavens and looked for him. She looked everywhere, scouring the 9 spheres and the Empyrean, but she couldn't find him.

Gabriel came to report to her that Kyon has landed in Hell. She got angered and asked why he was there, for he did nothing wrong. Gabriel stated that he committed the sin of lust, the subject of his lust being Haruhi.

Haruhi spoke with vicious rage. "SO WHAT!? I'VE DONE THAT TOO! DID YOU SEE WHAT I DID TO ASAHINA!? HELL, I'VE COMMITTED VIOLENCE AGAINST OTHERS IN MY MORTAL LIFE! HECK, MY GREATEST SIN WAS GREED! I WANTED EVERYTHING FOR MY CLUB! SO DO IT, GABRIEL! SEND ME TO HELL!"

Gabriel responded by stating that all of those are irrelevant, for she was God. She was "perfect."

"Bullshit. This isn't fair... Prepare the warriors of the 5th, we're going to hell to save Kyon."

Gabriel regretfully informs her that Kyon was erased by Lucifer himself, minutes after landing in Hell.

Haruhi fell to the ground and cried into Heaven's clouds, causing a large storm to swallow the Earth for days.

Afterward, she retook her throne in the Empyrean. She was back to this abysmal, lonely life in paradise.

But maybe it was for the best. Haruhi realized that as long as she was capable of loving someone, then they'd inevitably be harmed. And she'd feel bad about it.

Love is pain, Haruhi thought. Loving others is opening a gateway to suffering.

She wouldn't harm others again, and she'd never feel the pain of loving others again. She promised. She'd remain as the deity of the universe, never interfering with civilization.

And yet, in her heart laid flame. The desire for vengeance.

One day, she'd promised, she'd kill Lucifer and destroy the Inferno. She would make him feel the worst pain in the whole universe before erasing him. This she swore, and the day has come.

...

Haruhi's face looked emotionless when she explained this story to me.

"But even then..." I had to keep trying to plead with her. "You're risking the safety of the universe with this war. Let me tell you, innocent people will get caught in the crossfire."

"Those people are in Hell for a reason, Michael." Haruhi refuted. "The system works and is just. Deal with it."

"The ones in Limbo didn't even do anything!"

"The world is black and white, Michael, good and bad. And I have to eliminate the bad."

"But can't you see what you're doing is bad?"

"Bad? Look at me, Michael. I've suffered long enough."

"Haruhi, please listen."

"No, YOU listen, dipshit. If I could go back in time, then I'd spend all of those years in high school all over again, a loop that never ends. An endless eight. I never felt happiness until that moment, and when I lost it, I lost it forever. Love is pain, but it is also motivation. It's what kept me alive and living beyond my depression that had caused me to only sit in my throne for years. Let me go down in Hell and make the demons burn from their own fire. I want to taste the tears of the Fallen Angels who betrayed me during Lucifer's Rebellion. Let me bathe in the burning blood of Lucifer, I want to feel it melt my skin as rip his fucking head off and feed it to his own Hounds."

Her eyes glowed red.

"The conflict of Heaven and Hell ends tonight. Let this folly be done with at long last. It has been years since Kyon's death, and I shall remember it until I kill myself. Kyon is home, and I must pay him a visit soon."

...

Gamebang POV

I walked around the 9th, thinking about my next move. Kazuma is doing something and Darkness is with me, on a leash. I don't feel horny right now, so she's basically just my hypersexual companion.

"WHERE ARE WE GOING!?" She said, hearts in her eyes and saliva dripping to the floor. "ARE YOU TAKING ME TO BE DEFILED BY THE FALLEN ANGELS!?"

"No." I answered. We pulled up to some random pole of ice. I tied her leash around there. Weirdly, she didn't fight back.

As I walked away, I could hear her maniacally laughing. I see everyone else's faces and even they don't wanna rape her. What a bazillion years of no sex does to person, she was a perfect example.

"Hey." Kazuma came up to me and tapped my shoulder. "You're gonna wanna see this."

"Hm?"

"Just follow me." And so I did.

We walked back to the entrance of the 9th circle, but it was above us and we couldn't exactly fly to it. But then, a Giant came up to us and laid down. It opened its mouth, it's stinking hot breath smelled of a thousand years of unclean dirt.

"Are we- we going inside?" I asked Kazuma.

"Unfortunately." He responded.

I psych myself up and take a deep breath before following Kazuma into the mouth. Once we were in, it closed. Darkness.

Kazuma lit up a torch and guided me to our destination.

"What is this?" I asked.

"Our only hope of getting into Purgatory."

We arrived at the stomach, and to my surprise, there were tons and tons of people here. Demons and Fallen Angels and people, all types of creatures. They were here inside this Giant.

We passed through most of them and came to the center of attention. It was a woman sitting on a weird throne made of spears. The throne looked hideous, but not as hideous as the one sitting on it once I realized who they were.

"Team meeting starts now." Cersei Lannister said, she clapped her hands to call everyone.

Beside her stood Walter White, I assume he's her assistant.

A bubbly voice behind us started laughing. "I LOVE MEETINGS!" It said. I looked behind and uh it was Barney? "BUT DO YOU KNOW WHAT I LOVE MORE? KIDS!"

Oh god no, my childhood.

"First order of business, our allies in the Paradiso." Cersei spoke. "Light Yagami has done an excellent job in gathering people in Heaven for our cause."

"Only he could fool the Purgatorio into believing he walked the path of redemption." Walter White stated.

"Through the use of this uh..." Cersei leaned to Walt. "What's it called again?"

"An iPhone."

"The iPhone! Through the use of this device's communication system, Light has been able to report on his journey. He has gathered many people to our cause."

"So what's she's saying is..." I whispered to Kazuma. "There's someone in Heaven that doesn't belong there?"

"Yeah." Kazuma said.

"The afterlife has been ruled by deities and divine beings long enough." Cersei said. "Who are they to decide whether a man is good or bad? To spend an eternity for what? Stealing bread?"

"You also fucked your brother." I very quietly whispered to myself.

"That ends tonight." Cersei's voice became commanding. "What do the divine know of morality? They haven't been in our shoes, they know not of our ethics. I propose an afterlife where all is fair, where we can live in paradise whereas those who are truly wrong live in Hell."

Tch, she's one to talk fair. All she wants is power and to enter Heaven. That's who Cersei Lannister always was, a power hungry bitch who cares only for herself. Actually, how did she get this many people for her cause?

"The Devil will walk into paradise and we will remain here, where we will execute our plan. A coup to take over Hell." She brought out a matchstick which burnt a tiny little green fire.

I knew what it was, and the fear consumed me. I was stunned.

"Wildfire..." I said.

"Oh?" Cersei noticed me. Not a good sign. "You know this?"

I awkwardly nodded.

"Good. Then you know of how destructive it is, even for Hell standards. Just as good as dragon fire."

"How did you get it here in the afterlife?" I asked. I couldn't help it.

"Interesting question." Cersei said. "One word. Angels."

Cersei left her circle and spent months in hiding from demons. She spent her time gathering people for her cause, her first being Walter White. She intended to follow in her brother Jaime's footsteps and go with him to Purgatorio, but Jaime rejected her. She stayed in Hell for the pursuit of power, disguised as a righteous effort.

She explained that an Angel from Heaven named Aladiel came to Hell a few weeks ago to check on Lucifer, instructed by God. He was to retrieve information about his emotional state. While this was happening, Cersei came out of the shadows and seduced Aladiel. It was the first time Aladiel had felt lust, and he had sinned.

Angels are one of the only afterlife creatures to have the ability to freely enter the realm of the living. Cersei manipulated Aladiel with her body to make him do whatever she wishes. Cersei wished for Aladiel to go into Westeros and bring back millions of barrels containing Wildfire. And once he was done, she did what he wanted. Cersei often used her own body for her own benefits. She'd do anything for the sake of power.

"With the support of Azazel in our mission, half of the Wildfire has been secretly placed on every inch of Hell. The other half is being placed inside Heaven as we speak by Aladiel, with Light Yagami supervising and instructing him."

She stood up from her throne of spears and placed her viridescent flaming matchstick into the seat. The whole throne burnt in green flame, melting immediately. The heat from the Wildfire was making me sweat an entire ocean, hotter than the fires of Hell. Fire makes glass fog up, Wildfire makes glass explode.

"All it takes is one match to erupt every barrel." Cersei said, with pure evil in her voice. "And once we do this, the afterlife is ours."

Yours, you mean. I knew what she was, I read A Feast for Crows a million times.

"The battle for Heaven and Hell begins soon, and our takeover will be right under it. Once God and the Devil kill each other, the afterlife is ours for the taking." She sounded sure of it. That they'd both die.

"But there's no time to waste. We have one last preparation operation before the night falls." Walter White spoke. "That involves all of you."

I guess that includes me too. Oh god, what is it.

"We need to be prepared for battle. Just because Wildfire is powerful doesn't mean it can kill all our foes." Walt explained. "We're heading back into the 8th circle for some weapons."

"The 8th?" Kazuma was confused.

"The 8th circle contains that giant snake pit. The snakes there aren't regular snakes. You get bit by one and you'll turn into some weirdly horrifying yet useless creature or random object with no purpose. Once you're bitten by one, you're stolen of everything that made you who you are."

"Scary." I said.

"We're going to use these snakes as weapons. I urge everyone to grab a small snake for their own so that you're less likely to be bitten by them when holding it by the tail. Long snakes will be last minute efforts and we'll place them in some basket or something."

"What about the Flaming Sword?" Barney asked.

"Don't be stupid." Walt responded. "No one can grab that thing except for the Arch Angel Michael. I'm surprised they even kept it in Hell."

After a bit of preparation, all of us exited the Giant's mouth and began to move, the Giant coming along with us. We were marching back to the 8th circle of Hell.

Except me, who snuck out of the march to head back into the 9th to try and get into the Purgatorio.

I returned to the floors of ice, surrounded by demons and murderers. I head to the center and stand before the Devil's beast form. Looks like that teenager isn't controlling it for the moment since it isn't really moving. Below the hole where this beast lies is the entrance to Purgatory. I make a run for it, heading for that hole-

"Well look who it is!" Lucifer appeared behind me. I stopped running immediately. "What are you doing, vessel of Yog-Sothoth?"

Oh shit he knows. "Just trying to see how slippery the ice is, sir." I answered. "Uh, you know the Eldritch Gods?"

"Of course I do, I'm besties with Lu-Kthu. Although he weirdly hasn't been responding to my texts."

Gulp.

"Anyway, our ice is not that slippery. So there's your answer." He answered me.

"Ah, well." I spoke nervously to this person who was literally shorter than me. "Guess that's it then. Thank you."

"Hah!" Lucifer laughed. "You don't hear much of people thanking the Devil." He summoned a cup of wine from thin air. "You thirsty?"

"No." I responded.

"Hm, a shame." He began to drink. Which was a pretty weird sight since he was a teenager who didn't look to be of legal drinking age. But I suppose they did live for a bazillion years. "You wanna head inside the beast?" He asked me, pointing to that giant three-headed of his. Well, I do need to go under it.

"I mean, I guess." I said.

"Oh, you're gonna be surprised. It's like a whole mansion in there!" He gleefully ran to the beast and flew to the eye. I couldn't fly, so...

...

"AGH!" I spent 30 minutes climbing this damned thing. It didn't help that the skin was pretty hot and uncomfortable to touch, as if I was touching tryphobia itself. I made it to the eye with maximum and effort and laid on the floor, exhausted.

I look up, and it seems to be a lavish mansion. The eye seems to act as a balcony.

I walked around, looking at the various dismembered body parts of random historical figures displayed on here. Oh hey, it's Judas' penis! It's so small!

I went to the end of the room and opened a door, which brought me into a living room. The couch was red and so was the carpet, but everything looked really nice actually. The TV was large and playing my favorite film, aka "Gamebang and The Dogs: The Movie."

Everything was clean and neatly organized. Hm, cool.

"Over here!" Lucifer called me from another room. As he went inside, I began to walk to it.

Entering the room, it was a place entirely dedicated to music. All sorts of instruments laid on the floor, albums from multiple famous artists on the table, papers of original lyrics written entirely by Lucifer, compositions by him, all music.

Lucifer showed me to the piano. "You know how to play?"

"Only a few songs." I answered. I took a few classes in high school.

"Good enough! Sit down."

And so I did.

"So uh..." I tried making conversation. "God huh. Must be quite the gal."

"Oh yeah bro, you wouldn't believe it!" He was more youthful when talking of his crush. "She has everything, man! She's perfect!"

"I mean, what do you expect from God itself?"

"Ever since she made me, I have had nothing but the biggest crush on her!"

"Okay, Oedipus, calm down."

"She may not like me, but this date will be different!" Lucifer said with hurt.

"So I've heard."

"She hates me. I understand that. Azazel keeps telling me that I should've moved on an entire millennia ago."

"Why haven't you?"

He sighed. "Because I don't wanna give up! I know she's my soulmate!"

"You're lonely." I had to admit, I knew how he felt. Because of Ciarda. "You want to be happy, and you placed all your hopes of happiness to her. You won't give up on happiness, you will never give up on her, even if you haven't seen them in forever."

"No! She will love me!"

"...Or maybe you're just obsessed." I responded.

"... Do you know Wonderwall?"

... Hm.

I began to play on the piano, focused on making sure I don't mess up. And suddenly, the Devil's voice went from this cynical silly person to someone truly heartfelt yet sorrowful. He began to sing...

"Today is gonna be the day that they're gonna throw it back to you

And by now, you should've somehow realised what you gotta do

I don't believe that anybody feels the way I do about you now

And backbeat, the word is on the street that the fire in your heart is out

I'm sure you've heard it all before, but you never really had a doubt

I don't believe that anybody feels the way I do about you now

And all the roads we have to walk are winding

And all the lights that lead us there are blinding

There are many things that I would like to say to you, but I don't know how..."

Suddenly, his voice became more vulnerable.

"Because maybe..."

You're gonna be the one that saves me

And after all

You're my wonderwall."

The song finished, and he stood there silently.

"It's not true though, is it?" I said. " 'You're gonna be the one that saves me.' It's not true. That's a false hope you put on someone you hope will give you the happiness you desire. But no, that person doesn't like you, and quite the opposite happens when you do like them. You feel pain."

"Bro shut up omggg"

"You hold on to that little speck of hope that they'll love you back, because people's nature are automatically optimistic, whether we like it or not. It's all a fantasy, a delusion drawn by emotion, and emotions consume more than rationality. You're always aware that they never did, but somehow...You're still holding on. Why?"

"Because you love them."

"Yeah... Exactly. Love conquers all, even rational thinking. It's an emotion we cannot defeat, and it can defeat us until we feel like turds."

"L + Ratio Im not listening" He asked.

Okay I don't like this kid.

Before I knew it, I was playing the piano. And this time, I was singing. My voice wasn't as good as Lucifer's, but it was enough to convey pain.

"When you were here before

Couldn't look you in the eye

You're just like an angel

Your skin makes me cry

You float like a feather

In a beautiful world

I wish I was special

You're so fuckin' special

But I'm a creep

I'm a weirdo

What the hell am I doin' here?

I don't belong here

I don't care if it hurts

I wanna have control

I want a perfect body

I want a perfect soul

I want you to notice

When I'm not around

So fuckin' special

I wish I was special

But I'm a creep

I'm a weirdo

What the hell am I doin' here?

I don't belong here."

My voice became more desperate and longing. More painful and louder.

"She's running out the door

She's running out

She run, run, run, run

Run

Whatever makes you happy

Whatever you want

You're so fuckin' special

I wish I was special

But I'm a creep

I'm a weirdo

What the hell am I doin' here?

I don't belong here

I don't belong here..."

I was thinking maybe this song can help Lucifer understand what he was feeling. But,,,

"Bro, skill issue. Just talk to her and she'll suck your dick!"

This man is a literal incel. I gave up by this point. "Fuck it."

I played one last song on the piano. I look to him and gesture that we both need to sing together.

He sang first... *"I dreamed a dream in time gone by*

When hope was high and life worth living

I dreamed that love would never die

I prayed that God would be forgiving

Then I was young and unafraid

And dreams were made and used and wasted

There was no ransom to be paid

No song unsung, no wine untasted..."

I sang next. *"But the tigers come at night*

With their voices soft as thunder

As they tear your hopes apart."

And then, we both sang.

"And they turn your dreams to shame..."

He looked at me, shook his head back and forth and continued to sing on his own.

"And still I dream she'd come to me

That we would live the years together..."

I joined in.

"But there are dreams that cannot be

And there are storms we cannot weather."

He looked as if he was about to cry as he sang the final part alone. I think I finally made him understand these hopeless feelings.

"I had a dream my life would be

So different from this hell I'm living

So different now from what it seemed

Now life has killed the dream, I dreamed..."

...

Collei POV

I can't breathe... It's dark and all the children are crying. I'm crying. It's cold, so so cold. I want my mother, I want to be out of here. My arm hurts. I don't even know what illness I have. She sent me here, my own mother... This isn't help, this is Hell.

No matter how much I cried out, I thought no one would answer.

"Father... Mother..." I said with weakness and despair. "Help me. Help..."

Hours prior, they once again injected me with something strange. It made my body go all haywire and it hurt. It hurts like heck. It felt like my arm was going to explode any second. The pain ended an hour ago, but the pain lingers still.

Everyone has abandoned me and sent me to be killed. What kind of God allows this to happen to their people? The Seven... Everyone looks up them. No, there is no God.

The voice tells me to embrace them, to use their power. If I do, then I'll finally escape and live. If I do, the Fatui's blood will be on my tongue. If I do, The Doctor will feel my wrath. So why not? Why shouldn't I use it?

Burn them, burn them all.

"Seer! How is Collei!? Please let me see my child!"

... I heard it outside this dark room.

"Mother?" I said.

"Collei!"

"I- I ah-"

"Sir, this woman has bugged us many times now." Unfamiliar voices said.

"Get rid of that pestering woman."

"Yes sir."

... What was I thinking? I thought that everyone else had given up on me, that'd I'd kill them all. Even mother... And now I lost her.

I can't protect the ones closest to me because I'm weak. And whenever I get close to someone, I will lose them, and I'll be hurt. This pain in my chest, it stabs like a sword.

I don't want to connect with others anymore. All it does is bring pain. All I can do...is bring those who have bestowed this sickening suffering upon me blood and fire. For mother, for father, for me. I will bring this world to it's knees, my anger shall not be ignored.

"The child who is not embraced by the village will burn it down to feel its warmth."

Huh! Who said that!?

"Do you understand the quote, Little Collei?" Lisa said.

"Um, I think so." I answered.

"Is something on your mind, dear?" She asked.

I shook my head.

"I'm only trying to help, dear."

"Why me?"

"Why? Well, you asked for it, and who am I to not offer assistance? That's how people are."

Then why haven't people come for me. When I was suffering under the Fatui. Why has everyone rejected me.

"You weren't rejected, you rejected yourself."

Huh?

"You rejected yourself, Collei, from others." Gamebang said.

"Wha... What are you-"

"Your card, Collei." Gamebang said. I looked down to the table and there was a board game. Oh... He was referring to the game. Yeah, I did reject myself from buying a museum- what are we playing?

"The game of life..." I read the box of the board game that was right next to us.

I looked at Gamebang's character, and it was on the marriage turn.

"Uh... Is there a way to avoid this?" He asked.

"I don't think so." I responded.

He sighed. "I'm sorry little pink character..." He placed one inside his car.

He asked the same thing when he landed on a turn that gave you kids.

I found it pretty amusing. I laughed. It was funny.

Gamebang was always nice to me. His lessons were always fun and informative. He never hesitated to help me in anything academically related. It's because of him that I am able to read more properly these days.

Master Tighnari and Cyno too... They're always checking up on me and make me feel like I'm part of a family. Tighnari is my teacher and Cyno is just fun to be around, even if I can't understand some of the things he's saying.

"You see, Collei..." Cyno once explained to me. "The Fandom is stupid for thinking the eagles could've flown the ring into Mordor. The whole point of the journey was to stay under radar from Sauron. Clearly visible flying objects entering the perimeters of Mordor, as well as carrying the ring, simply would've alerted Sauron and sent the Nazgul after them. Again, the whole point was to keep the ring secret and hidden. You need a high IQ to understand Lord of the Rings-"

"Cyno, what are you doing." Tighnari entered the room. "Collei, doesn't know what you're talking about, nor has she ever seen LOTR."

"She hasn't?" Cyno said. "Well, well, you wanna waste away 12 hours of your life, Collei?"

I did, and I enjoyed it very much. I cried at the end when Aragorn kneeled to the Hobbits and everyone else followed.

And... How can I forget? The person who literally forced me to embrace others. Amber. My first friend...

And someone who was like me! Sucrose! And I really treasured our time together!

And Izerak, my buddy. Someone I'd help in a heartbeat.

And Alizeh! She's helped me throughout school and...

Alizeh...

...

Sucrose...

...

I remember. Alizeh murdered Sucrose and raped Izerak. She would've done that to me if she hadn't died. She has hurt my friends, and I considered her one.

It's... It's betrayal.

How could someone I cared for do that to others I also cared for? Why... Why? I feel so much rage against her... I thought we were friends... If she was still alive, I'd rip her throat out and gouge her eyes.

And... Gamebang. His brains were blown right in front of me. Someone I cared about, my tutor, they were murdered in front of me. Their blood was on my face, and I felt the blow of the gun, smelt the smoke of the bullet.

Why do people I care about get hurt?

Sucrose is dead, Izerak was defiled, Alizeh is evil, and Gamebang is also dead...

If something happened to Amber, Master, and Cyno... No, I don't want that...

In cases like these back then, when I still rejected people, I vowed to never connect with anyone again for the fear of getting hurt.

But I'm a different person now. I want to keep connecting with others.

So... When someone is hurt and taken away, I don't want to give up so easily. I won't reject others, no, I will keep finding others, even if it means to follow them into the depths of Hell.

I will not accept Gamebang's death. No. Not when he was killed right before my very eyes.

Those who hurt the ones closest to me will receive nothing but blood. And I will not give up on making my friends live.

Once I'm done with the Inferno, I will come back to the living world and go to Inazuma. I will find the NFI and burn them all. I want even their blood to evaporate from the heat. I want to smell their corpses, the sweetest smell that ever existed. This I swear.

So... Whatever is inside my neck... The Archon Residue... The powers of pure negativity.

...

To the powers that have been sealed within me... Take my hand and don't let go.

"Ah!" I woke up.

I saw [Insert GenshinPlace member] and Com Insydeme discussing something. Com saw me awake, and went to my side.

"Hey! Do you feel okay?" He asked me.

"Yeah..." I answered. "I feel so much better."

I stood up from my slumber, looking over the cliff, down on the darkness that contains the 8th.

My hand touches the seal behind my neck, it's bleeding so badly, but I don't care. And bit by bit, I feel the lines of the seal disappearing.

Haha...

And then, I see something head towards us. Something flying.

A Fallen Angel.

It landed in front of us, it's wings made [Insert GenshinPlace member] and Com fall down, but I didn't. I stood my ground.

"I sensed a great presence from you, child." The Fallen Angel said.

"What of it." I asked.

"Archon Residue..."

"So you know."

"That only means you are from the world of living. You're not dead, so what are you trying to find here?"

What am I trying to find? Find a chance for vengeance...

"What's your name." I asked.

"Azazel."

"Do you think you can bring me and my friends down there?"

"Possibly, but not without equal exchange. A deal."

"Consider it done."

"Colleil!" Com yelled. "What are you doing!?"

"Your powers may prove to be of some use..." Azazel said to me. "I'll bring you to where you need to be, and you will use your powers to traverse the mountain of the Purgatorio."

"Interesting offer. What of the Purgatorio?"

"There are trials and tribulations in Purgatory that man like me has no time for. Your powers can simply burn through the walls and get us to the top quickly."

"And why is a Fallen Angel trying to get into Heaven? I know that beyond the Purgatorio is paradise... You miss home?"

"I have no home. The afterlife is a place of inequality and unfairness. They literally sealed off Purgatory, the only place in the afterlife where you can achieve redemption. Because these people don't believe in that."

"Sounds shitty." I said.

"It is." Azazel said. "I'm tired of unfairness and division in this place."

"So what? You're going to open Purgatory so people will have a chance to enter Heaven?"

"It's a good plan, but I don't agree with the philosophy." Azazel stated. "Death shouldn't discriminate nor should it rank. We all die one day, it is only fair that we all receive the same result. Death is something beyond the petty laws of the universe's civilizations, it is far above everything. It should not care for the concepts people made up, it is Death."

"What are you saying."

"Through careful planning and the use of human behavior, I am going to make the afterlife equal to everyone."

"And that is?"

Azazel smiled. "I am going to destroy Heaven, Hell, and Purgatory. Burn it all to dust until there is nothing. Then, once people die, what comes after death is simply nothing. That is true equality."

I sighed. "I could care less of the politics of death." I said. "Just get me back to my tutor, and I'll even destroy the mountain of Purgatory for you."

"Collei!" Com shouted.

"Damn it, she's gone mad!" [Insert GenshinPlace member] said.

Azazel laughed. "You truly are something else, child..." He held out his hand for me. "I guess we have a deal."

I stay there, emotionless. And then, I took his hand and shook it.

Azazel swiftly took me in his arms and we flew away from the cliff.

"COLLEI!!!" Com yelled out for me, but I didn't look back. Don't look back, Collei, you need to keep moving forward.

As me and Azazel flew deeper into the 8th, we came across a pit of snakes. Weirdly, a shit ton of people were stealing these magic snakes.

Then we passed that, and every other place in the 8th. And then, we headed into the 9th.

And suddenly, the ground was ice, and people were frozen within it.

"Who do you seek?" Azazel asked me.

"My tutor, Gamebang." I said.

"Oh, that guy. Don't worry, I know where he is. He's here in Hell."

Wow I thought I was gonna have to travel the entire afterlife to Heaven to find him, but I guess I forgot he kinda cheated on a few people.

But this makes my journey alot easier...

"Take me to him." I told Azazel.

I'm coming, Gamebang. Just you wait.

And suddenly, I felt my eyes glow the power of the Archon Residue. And then, my hands produced purple energy.

Chapter 5: Ascent.

Obama POV

"Any news on the NFI?" I asked the guards outside my door.

"Nothing new, sir." They said. "The experiment is still happening and PolandBall's members are still in danger."

I scoffed. "My friends aren't dying today. I know they won't. They were my team." I shut the door and went back to Michael's dead body.

Oh Michael... Even though I have full hope that you'll return, a part of me is worried for your safety. But why should I? You survived the end of all things, you can survive a little death. But perhaps, I am still afraid because of the future Lily foretold.

A year from now, all we have cared for will be destroyed in a great crisis.

We have no idea of what is to happen in the months leading up to this event, but we will fight no matter what.

But also... I am very tired. Ever since Michael voluntarily went to the heavens, I haven't slept. For the fear of something happening while I was unconscious, or sleeping too long to the point I can't bring Michael back because too much time has passed.

Honestly, I could've slept earlier. But I didn't.

I have a goal here, and I intend to bring back my assistant no matter what.

"Sir!" A guard of mine opened the door. "We have received new information from our spies."

"Bring it here." I said immediately.

He gave me a document.

NFI Activity spotted at Guyun Stone Forest. 3 men and 1 woman.

What's the NFI doing in Liyue?

"Do we have any soldiers near Guyun Stone Forest?" I asked.

"We do sir."

"Send them a message to investigate." I ordered. "Whoever it is, I want them to report back to the spies immediately so that we'll get our info."

...

Morbius POV

So like, the PolandBall discord server reported that there is some activity in Liyue. Specifically Guyun Stone Forest. Me and Gwen are already on our way to Inazuma and left the harbor a few minutes ago. Our route on this ship includes Guyun Stone Forest.

"Hey, sir?" I went to the captain of the ship.

"Hm?" She noticed my presence.

"If it not trouble you, I'd like to stop at Guyun Stone Forest for a little while."

"Reason?"

"I'll pay you 2x more than what I'm already giving you."

"Deal." We shook hands.

And so, we stopped at Guyun Stone Forest. Me and Gwen hopped off to investigate. I took this mission since I needed that cash. PolandBall pays super well but missions haven't been popping up lately.

We landed on the island where the Domain of Guyun is located. It has a large cave perfect for hiding. We went inside it, but nothing but the domain itself. And the domain seems to be locked shut, so we can't really get in if anyone is inside, but neither can they get out since it's literally never going to open again.

"No one." I told Gwen. "Let's check the place where the Geo Hypostasis is."

"I don't know man..." She told me. "I have a bad feeling about this. I mean, your character hasn't been given much to do lately."

"Don't worry about it." I started heading to the place, but Gwen grabbed my arm.

"I'm scared." She told me.

I was immediately taken aback, she's never been like this before.

"I feel scared to read the next page." She said. "I don't... I wanna be part of the story." Her eyes conveyed worry. "If I... If I die, I'll go back to the real world. The one where Michael Jackson and Obama aren't actually best friend. The one where everything is boring and... I like this life, even if it's dangerous."

"What are you saying...?"

"Morbis, your character hasn't been doing anything these past 2 fics... And if you are to continue being a character, then you need something to happen. Just like Martine."

I tensed up. I don't get what she's saying, but she's expressing it ominously.

"If I go back into the real world... I won't be here anymore. I like living in this nonsensical world where any piece of media can exist with another at the same time for no explanation. Where Michael Jackson is still alive and Eren Yeager is gay." She laughed amidst her frightened expressions. "I want to stay... But I can feel it as these words are being typed out. Something is going to happen..."

She's scared for the future. It wasn't good seeing her like this, it was unusual. She always told the truth. She's telling it now.

"Gwen." I said. "No matter what happens, we're going to live. I promise you."

After a short while, she simply nodded. And thus, I walked to the location of the Geo Hypostasis, with Gwen behind me. She already had her sword ready.

We entered the field where the Geo Hypostasis sleeps. It is still there and inactive, unless we get near it.

In the corner of the my eye, I spot 3 Nobushi and 1 woman, tied up and her head covered by a paper bag, including her hair. She wears a commoner's clothing.

"That doesn't always look good." I said. "They're Nobushi, so we found our targets." I ran straight for the attack, not giving them time to react.

I punched two to the ground while one swung his sword at me. I dodged it by going under and tackled him to the floor. Upon impact, the sword left his hand. I immediately punched his stomach with the force of a falling fridge to make him stay on the ground.

I look behind and see the two charging towards me with swords in hand. Gwen slid on the ground and knocked them off their feet, falling to the stone surface. She stood quickly and held her the pointy end of her sword close to the face of one opponent.

The other one attempted to attack Gwen from behind, by I swooped by and tackled him. Both of us were holding on to one another, trying to kill the other by any means necessary.

We both moved closer to the Geo Hypostasis, and it awakened from its slumber. It's center shined gold as its body moved to us. I used all my strength to shove my opponent away and to the Hypostasis. The Hypostasis formed a large hand and my opponent was under it. His whole body was slammed by the hand, a splatter of blood came out in all directions, covering the floor and the hand. Once the hand disappeared, my opponent was dead. Most of his bones broken, and his skull cracked.

I look to Gwen, who had killed the one she was cornered with her sword. We both look at each other, wondering the same thing. Where is the last one? I beat him up minutes ago and punched his stomach, but he was gone from the ground when I looked to where he was last.

"AH!" A tight hand took hold of my neck and held me up, my feet leaving the ground and onto air. There was no mistaking it from Gwen's eyes, it was the Nobushi. A sword was held at my throat.

"Move and I'll kill him." The Nobushi said. Gwen radiated frustration. She pointed her sword at him.

After a minute of silence and staring, the Nobushi held my entire body and ran away from her. Gwen followed. Conveniently, the Hypostasis was on cooldown and was simply a floating crystal, so our enemy had no trouble getting to the other side of the battlefield. And once he did, the Hypostasis formed back into its cube, ready for battle. Gwen was still running in its attack range, but she was prepared.

The Hypostasis summoned pillars of yellow stone from the ground to knock Gwen off her own feet, but she jumped on all of them instead and performed parkour, her skill getting her closer and closer to the Hypostasis. The yellow cube began to shoot stone pellets at Gwen, who dodged every single one while running towards us. And then, the Hypostasis made rocks rain from the sky. She couldn't dodge this, but she still persisted, even after parts of her costume were ripped apart. Her mask, destroyed by stone and now flying in the air, her face of pure determination now visible, her golden half pink hair flowed in the wind of her speed. Her cheeks, scarred from rock, crimson fluid dropped on her clothes.

And after all that, the Hypostasis was finally on cooldown. She had made it to the finish line and stood in front of me and the Nobushi. Not giving the enemy time to react, she swung her sword to his face and destroyed the flesh between his mouth. Blood was on my face. The Nobushi let go of me and fell to the floor, dead.

"Jesus..." I said. "Thanks."

"Simply the power of being awesome." She responded.

"Where's the girl they were carrying?" I asked.

"Over there at the..." The Hypostasis awoke and placed a Geo Seal around her body, basically locking on its next attack onto her, no way to escape. She looked behind to see the cube preparing stones to come her way.

She immediately ran away to a random direction in the hopes to dodge the attack, by nothing could get rid of that seal. And then, the rocks were launched towards her.

"GWEN!" I screamed.

I don't know what was more horrifying. Her face before she was hit, or the sounds made when she was hit. But I saw it all, and the blood was on the floor. Her face not visible, for it has been covered in stone.

I couldn't scream, I was too shocked to. Just like that, she was dead. No grand send-off or anything, no final words, nothing. She was simply dealt an unfair hand. And for what? What?

The Geo Hypostasis set its eyes on me. I didn't want to move. It felt as if the Gods had tortured me for entertainment.

"MMMM!!!" I heard. "MMM-MMM!!"

I looked to where it was coming from and it was the girl the Nobushi were carrying. She was clearly calling for help.

"Damn it..." I ran away immediately from the Hypostasis and to the girl. I tried to take off the rope they tied her with, but it was tight as love.

"MM!" She said. And her hand started moving aggressively for my attention.

I looked and saw a ring. The finger it was wrapped around moved faster than the others.

"Do I take it off?" I asked.

Her head, covered in that bag, nodded swiftly.

It was difficult to remove from her finger. It stuck like perfume. But I saw the Hypostasis preparing stone pellets to send our way. I don't know why, but I should've stood up and attacked back, but I didn't, I kept trying to take off the ring. I had this feeling.

And through blood and sweat, I took the ring off her finger, taking with it some of her skin as well, for that's how tight it was.

And then, purple light radiated her body. Electricity summoned from thin air to burn off the rope that bounded her. She stood up taller than me.

She took off the bag from her head. Her long purple hair flowed in the wind like water.

She held her hand out and summoned a spear from nothing. The sky around us turned grey, and thunder rained from above.

Thus, she opened her eyes. "Erase all threats."

As the Hypostasis flew closer to her, she swung her spear, creating a giant eye-like form in the air. As the Hypostasis was hit with this attack, it exploded into purple electrifying madness. Parts of the cube flew all around on the ground. The Geo Hypostasis was destroyed.

"Clothes of a commoner." She said as she looked at what she was wearing. "Smart of the Nobushi to seal my identity from all."

"Who are you...?" I asked. She turned around to face me, and I instantly knew. "You're the Raiden Shogun..."

"Where are we, sir?" She asked.

"In... In Liyue, your grace."

"Hm. Well, that is a problem..." She looked at her surroundings. She noticed Gwen's dead body. "Oh my."

I deeply sigh. "Yeah." I grabbed a small rock and threw it in a random direction. I don't know why I did it, I just did.

"You've lost a loved one."

"Well... She wasn't the first one." I was reminded of Martine.

She took a deep breath. "I know how it feels."

I stood up and began to walk back to the ship in complete silence, until she called out to me.

"Where are you going?" She asked.

"To your country." I stated. "I'm going to hurt some people."

The fire in my heart has been lit.

"The NFI?" She said.

"Yup."

"Why were you pursuing the Nobushi?"

"They wanted to kill me and a friend that is currently in your home. I was investigating for the sake of possibly stopping the NFI."

"If your mission is to stop the NFI, then it is most favorable if you take me with you."

"I don't want to stop them." I said. "I want to make them pay."

"Vengeance is hopeless, sir. It is a cycle that goes round and round, and will only break if you let go."

"How the hell am I supposed to let go? Look, if you can help with this, then sure, come along. But don't stop me when I rip the spines out of the people running the NFI."

"I simply desire to save a loved one of mine from them. So if joining you is a step in my goal, then so be it."

I moved closer to her and held out my hand for a handshake. "It's a contract."

She nodded, and shook my hand.

We headed to the ship and set sail for Inazuma. The captain was quite astounded to see the Shogun in her boat.

"O-Oh my god." The captain said. "I- uh- Your Grace! The Crux is always honored to be at your service!"

"Thank you, fine woman. What is your name?" The Shogun asked.

"I am the captain of the Crux, Beidou."

"Then do me a kindness and set us for Inazuma. Although, if you and your crew are willing to join me to save my country, then I will forever be grateful."

...

Eren POV

The sunset was almost set for night, and the experiment was going to begin in a matter of hours.

Me and Historia were at my house, planning all sorts of illegal activities we could do for 12 hours.

"Well, most people are gonna be partying for the night." She said.

"And robbing places." I responded. "Which explains why alot of stores have heavy security now."

"We could do some robbing..." She said with a devious grin. "I could use a new PC."

"Well, murder is also legal." I stated. "But we ain't really in the mood, are we?"

"Yeah. I mean, who goes around murdering people for no reason?"

"Easiest 20k Mora ever."

"Well, I don't think there will be no murders tonight." She said. "You never know, someone's girlfriend could get raped tonight and it would be legal to do so, but so is murder, so..."

"Good point."

"The NFI is hoping for mass murder tonight, but that's simply not human nature." She stated. "The experiment is doomed to fail."

"Then what's going to solve all the problems in the country?"

"I don't know, but it won't be the NFI. Blood doesn't fix anything, it makes things worse."

...

Kujou Sara POV

1 hour until the experiment begins.

This is the first time the Tri-Commission collectively agreed on an affair like this. Probably because the NFI cheated put fear in the hearts of the members. Long ago, when the Shogun went missing, the NFI demonstrated their power to every government clan in Inazuma by imprisoning Yae Miko. No one is sure how such a powerful figure was treated so roughly. Her whereabouts are currently unknown, and so is the Shogun's still.

Our lives are forfeit if we disobey them, for Lady Chisato of the Hiiragi Clan was beheaded for trying to stop the experiment from happening. Even as her entire clan fought so hard for her life, they all failed. And since Lady Chisato left no heirs behind, the fate of her clan is unsure.

We've all been complying to the NFI and it's leader, Holden Hiscok. (I swear to the seven that can't be his name.)

Through fear and manipulation, the NFI rose in the ranks of Inazuma and controls all of us. The people do not know of the activities that occur within the walls of the ones that rule them. Holden Hiscok came up with the idea of this experiment through "A study from psychology." Which I call bullshit, but if I say anything I'll die, so.

We've been steadily preparing everything for the experiment. Government figures are granted immunity from any illegal action don't from them, and anything done to them is considered crime. So I'm safe from murder, but the common people aren't. Which makes me mad.

"Sara." Someone called to me. It was the current leader of the Kujou Clan, Kujou Kamaji.

"Brother." I responded. "How's preparations going?"

"Decently. Cameras are set all around Ritou, monitoring activity. As well as some...other plans."

"I assume I'm not allowed to know those plans?"

"Indeed, sister." He sat down and put his head down, tired from all the work. "I just hope you know I don't do these actions because I support it. I do it for our family."

"I know, brother. I know."

"Our lives depend on tonight. As well as all other clans." Kamaji rubbed his eye. "Ritou will be a blood bath."

"The experiment won't succeed, brother." I said. "Believe in the citizens of Inazuma to stay on the side of the ethical."

"Don't say stuff like that so casually, sister. The NFI might be watching."

I deeply sighed and sat down. "Can I say one thing?"

"Sure."

"I do not serve the NFI. I serve her majesty, the Raiden Shogun."

...

I walk through the halls of the Tenshukaku, where the Fatui Harbinger La Signora was killed. Where my life was at risk during the Vision Hunt Decree. It now acts as the headquarters for the NFI, and it is where important figures of each clan will be spending the night.

Everyone everywhere is doing something. Setting up cameras and computers, employing members to do some stuff, and a ton of whispers. This place is run by fear.

"Ah-" I ran into Kamisato Ayato while making my way across the halls. "Sir Kamisato."

"General Kujou." He said. "I trust Kamaji is prepared for tonight?"

"Yes sir, he has been working very hard."

"Good." His face looked more tired than my brother's. "Where are you going?"

"The documents room." I answered.

"Okay. I just came back from the security room to make sure everything was working. Glory." He left immediately.

I made my way to the documents room and closed the door, locking it. I look to the camera at the top.

Ayato's words earlier, "Glory." That was a signal for me. It is short and code for "GLORY To The Shogun And Her Everlasting Reign."

It was confirmation for me to know that the cameras in the documents room are currently disabled, thanks to him going into security. Now, I can sneak through the documents safely out of sight.

I take out my kamera to take pictures of the documents for Lady Chisato's murder, as well as the activities done to Yae Miko to submit to the NFI. I have no time to read them, I just need to keep taking pictures.

I take out more documents to take pictures of. Evidence of the shady things the NFI is doing to the clans, and the classified reasons for why they are doing the experiment.

"The hell you mean you can't find the two!?" A voice outside of the room said in anger.

"Michael Jackson and Barack Obama's whereabouts are unknown, off the radar. We cannot find them." Another voice said, it sounded like a soldier.

"Jesus, they must've known that we were coming for them. What about the other members?"

"Gamebang was successfully killed by me."

"That's one out of six. Anyone else?"

"[Insert GenshinPlace member]'s whereabouts are also unknown. We followed their footprints in Monstadt, but then they just disappeared."

"Did they also know? God! Nothing gets done around here. What about Eren Yeager?"

"He will be dealt with tonight, he is participating in the experiment itself. It seems unlike the others, he does not know of our hunt."

"And Morbius?"

"The person who was supposed to kill him has stayed in the same place where Morbius was last seen. He stayed there long enough to die from starvation, we do not know exact details yet until we retrieve the body. Other than that, Morbius is nowhere to be found as well."

"These results will bring all of you harm, trust in that. You all failed to bring down most of the men who have the ability to take us down."

"I'm sorry sir-"

"They need to die, soldier. If they stay alive, then PolandBall is going to end us."

PolandBall... Whoever they are, they are feared by the NFI. Interesting. I may need to report this back to the Priestess. It might be useful info.

"Sir... I also have one more thing to report."

"What the hell is it."

"There was another person with Gamebang. After I killed him, she strapped me to a chair a-and... S-She-She"

"She-She- She what? Speak up, soldier before I rip your mouth out."

"She threatened to cut my testicles off..."

"So what? Maybe it would've benefitted you to being less pussy."

"Sir, this girl has promised that she'd come to us and paint the sakura trees red in our blood. A declaration of war."

"God damn it, man, you're supposed to eliminate enemies, not make new ones. So even if you killed Gamebang, you didn't decrease our list of enemies! Maybe you DO need your balls cut off!"

"Sir, I'm scared of her. Please."

"Did you kill her? I assume not, since you're pussy against her. Bring me one more failure and your life is gone."

"Sir, I feel we must worry about her."

"Do you know who she is?"

"No, other than her appearance. She has green hair and is a young adult. Seems to be Sumeru-born."

"Alright then. We'll go for her next. And I'll make sure to send someone who will actually finish the job. Now get back to grounds and prepare for the experiment. It's gonna be a success."

The conversation ended there. I made sure to be as quiet as I can. And so, I continued taking final pictures of the documents.

Once I was done, I quietly placed everything back to where they were.

And then, I waited.

Knock knock, the door said. That's my signal to leave, to tell me that no one is going to see exit this room. I opened the door and see a member of the Hiiragi Clan walking away from the door as if nothing happened. I walk away from the security room as well. And as I walk, I see the security cameras behind me begin to function again, just in time after I left. It captured nothing of what I did, thanks to Ayato.

...

Me and Kamaji enter the Kamisato Estate through a scheduled meeting disguised as affairs unrelated to the experiment nor the NFI. It absolutely is related to the NFI, they just don't know.

"Why hello, Sir Kamisato." Kamaji said. "We are here to discuss some important matters. I'm sure you know what they are."

"Indeed, they are important. And I know what they are." Ayato responded.

"Indeed."

Behind Ayato, I see Kamisato Ayaka.

"Shall we discuss this in your basement? I hear the air-conditioning there is quite nice." Kamaji said.

"Why sure, good acquaintance of mine. We shall." Ayato responded.

We all walked and went down to the basement of the Estate.

It is dark and very far down, and completely undetectable from the outside.

Then, the lights turned on. The leader of the revolution sat in a small chair in front of us.

"Were the documents secured?" Leader of the revolution, Sangonomiya Kokomi said.

"Yes." I answered. I went up to her and carefully placed the kamera on the table.

"I trust you followed all safety precautions?" She asked.

"Yes." I answered. "Ayato disabled the security cameras. And I wore a different perfume when going inside to make sure my scent wasn't the one left behind, and wore a face mask to prevent my breath from entering the room. I wore gloves as well to make sure no fingerprints were left behind."

"A little too safe don't you think?" Ayaka said.

"You need to be more than careful when dealing with the NFI." Kokomi stated.

Kokomi approached every clan in the Inazuman Government and united every single one into a single group, which aims to abolish the NFI from their power and bring back the reign of the Shogun, or at least free Yae Miko from her prison. Watatsumi Island is disguised to be an active supporter of the NFI, but is secretly the main ground for the revolution.

Kokomi looked through the pictures I took.

"They even contained photo evidence of Lady Chisato's beheading..." Kokomi said. "Killed for treason. How hypocritical." She looked through more. "As I thought, their plan with the experiment is to murder the people stuck in poverty, leaving behind the higher people in the class. Hmph, too bad no one kills by random. Do they assume every middle-class citizen will just kill every homeless person they'll see? Population control by blood, even though it isn't guaranteed much blood will even be shed. The NFI is stupid."

"There was also something about a group called 'PolandBall' " I said. "People that the NFI fears and have been trying to assassinate, but to no avail."

"Hm, really? Interesting. Maybe if we contact this PolandBall we will have a chance to overthrow the NFI. If they really fear them that much, then they are a key player in this game of power."

She continued to look through the pictures. "Yae Miko." She said. "Hmph, this is sad. She has to comply to everything the NFI wants because they have the Raiden Shogun hostage. If she disobeys, then the Shogun dies. It says that both have a close relationship. If they are close enough for Yae to give up everything she held for the Shogun's safety, then it must be something special they both have."

"Does it say something about the Shogun herself?" Kamaji asked.

"That is top classified info only reserved for Holden Hiscok, it says here. He has those documents about the Shogun. So for now, we have nothing. But we know enough about Yae Miko." She placed the kamera on the table. "Good job, all of you. Especially Sara. We have everything we need to overthrow the NFI."

"Then do we release these documents now?" Ayato asked.

"No, our lives are forfeit if we release this out of the blue. We need to ensure our safety first. If we die, the Tri-Commission is done and gone. Even if the people antagonize the NFI due to these documents, they will still be in power if we die. We need Yae Miko. Plus... I wanna see how the experiment goes, and if it will provide us more incriminating info to leak soon. And PolandBall, as Sara mentioned. I wanna see what they got..."

"So what now?" I asked.

"Go back to Tenshukaku and observe the activities of the experiment. Capture as much evidence as you can of their actions. And until then, obey the NFI for your safety. Once the experiment is done, come back to me. Tonight, I have a phone call to make to PolandBall."

Kokomi stood up and continued to speak.

"Everything we do is for the sake of our country. For its people, for the innocent. For the sake of the ruler they have stolen from us, our Archon. We will bring down the NFI and bring Inazuma back to prosperity. Glory to the Shogun and her everlasting reign."

As her speech finished, the clock on her table began to ring. It's 7PM.

The experiment has begun.

...

Michael POV

"Oh Martin Luther King Jr..." I grabbed his shoulders and looked at him with desperation. "What do I do to prevent the war between Heaven and Hell..."

"I mean, if she says that it's fine for it to happen, then let it happen!" MLK replied. "I'd trust our God with anything!"

"For fucks sake man!" I shook him back and forth. "We're all gonna double-die!"

"Well, if you want better advice, then let's head back to the 2nd sphere and go to the man I always seek council from!"

"Which is..."

"JRR Tolkien, obviously."

"Okay, you have a point. I'd trust his words any day."

We hop back on the mighty horses we got from Mars and we make them fly us back to the 2nd.

As we traverse through the entirety of Heaven, I see many in the 5th preparing for battle, joined alongside Angels. Including one Aladiel, who looked rather distressed. The Heaven Army ranges around 1 billion. Not surprising considering this is where every single dead person ends up at, and there's alot of dead people. I can only guess the Hell Army is close to this length.

The last time we fought a war with high numbers was in the original universe, where Astolfo destroyed Teyvat, which ranged in at least 5 million soldiers. The Collapse of Time doesn't count. The fight against Alizeh was undoubtedly only a couple thousand, carried by powerful abilities alone. Although, I don't think anything can beat the casualty rate of the Collapse of Time, since the number of dead ranges in the uncountable, in the infinite. Plus, for a few moments, everything died.

So in terms of scale, this might be the second most high stakes mission PolandBall has ever taken. But in statistics, an army of 1 billion only guarantees major destruction to the realms of the afterlife. We have fought Gods, but never 1 billion soldiers all at once. Especially in such contained enclosed spaces, Heaven and Hell.

The destruction level is guaranteed to be high, considering this affects the entire universe we live in. Heaven and Hell are universal, and only one will win tonight.

We're looking at casualties that range in zillions. Living creatures from every place in our reality. Well, they're not really living anymore but they can still be erased. Entire realms destroyed.

The stakes are high, for this will decide the new status quo of the afterlife. What will happen after death?

These horses were really quick in getting me and MLK to the 2nd. I gave them some food to thank them for their service. We walk back into this golden castle and head for the library, past all the other luxurious stuff.

"Tolkien!" MLK called. "I am in need of counseling from your wise words- oh."

We notice someone is sitting right next to Tolkien, drinking tea alongside him. There's a pen and paper in front of Tolkien, but he seemed to have stopped writing to keep talking with this person, with their golden hair and mighty armor.

"Thank you for this fine tea from the 5th, Jaime." Tolkien said after he took another sip. "It's always nice to talk with you. I get to know what's happening on the other spheres!" Tolkien laughed to himself. "I do appreciate it dearly. I am devoted to the library and to providing everyone my works. It's still a humbling thing to know that so many love my writing, so I just keep wanting to stay and make more to the point I may as well be bound to this pen and paper. Not that I'm complaining, no, it's a blessing to do what I love for eternity."

"And you're the best at it." Jaime Lannister said with a warm smile. "It's a nice thing to read after a day of swinging swords, us at the 5th. Even Angels admire your work."

Tolkien smiled. "I guess that's simply the work of a story."

"My brother had a saying about stories." Jaime mentioned. "Although it didn't really fit at the time he said it, I think it fits now." Jaime's face expressed a warm revisit to the past. " 'What unites people? Armies? Gold? Flags? Stories. There's nothing more powerful in the world than a good story. Nothing can stop it. No enemy can defeat it.' "

Tolkien hummed in approval. "Sounds like he was a wise man."

Jaime smirked and nodded.

"Anyway, may you help me bring me to the Golden Stage?" Tolkien politely asked of Jaime. "Hoshino's performance is about to begin. I adore her talent and always try to support her."

"Of course." Jaime proceeded to help Tolkien up from his seat and help him walk to his destination.

"Thought we were going to ask for council." I told MLK.

"Sometimes, you just have to let the beautiful things be, and let their magic happen." MLK explained. "You wanna head to the performance too?"

"But... The war." I stated. I couldn't just abandon my duty here.

"Take a break, Michael. You haven't really had time to enjoy paradise yet." MLK held my shoulder. "I'm not telling you to ignore the lives at stake, I'm telling you to smile while there's still time. When was the last time you took a break?"

Well... Most of my time goes into working at headquarters.

Even after the Collapse of Time, me and Obama still had to work out interdimensional diplomacy to make sure we didn't get fucked in the long run. And after that, we went to Antarctica to search for Lily, spending months in a cold land, devoid of people. And even the time that followed, I was still working. And the time

before all of this, I was at Atlantis because the time machine was stolen. And before that, I... God, how long was that?

That was... almost 2 years ago. The year before those, we were facing the end of femboys. And... The one year between the end of femboys and the Atlantis mission was the only time I felt like I was at peace. Nothing to worry about, purely relax. 2 years ago... And I haven't stopped since, and I haven't stopped yet. Why?

Lily told me 1 year from now, we would all face a crisis unlike anything before. The events that would happen before that particular event would take place in the course of the year leading up to it. This war is one of them.

I'm scared. I'm terrified of the future. Even though it's already happened... I don't want to die. I don't want to suffer. I want to go back to that one year where absolutely nothing happened.

I...

"Alright." I said to MLK. "Let's go to that performance."

What followed next was an entertaining 2 hours of my time. Ai Hoshino danced and sang gracefully as wind. Everyone was dancing, smiles on everyone's faces. The music was upbeat and yet nostalgic in a way. It certainly wasn't like the ones I make. Mine would be played in a radio, hers would be at a party. And I partied the hell out.

For a few moments, I forgot the war was happening. For a few moments, I forgot I was dead. For a few moments, I forgot I was Michael Jackson. In these moments, I was just another audience member having a good time at a concert. No worries weighing me down, just music. Listen to the music, and be freed into a world that isn't yours.

... But then it's over, and the work begins again.

It was then I started to wonder and act upon this thought.

"Hey." I went up to Jaime Lannister as he was about to leave the 2nd to go back to the 5th. "If you don't mind me asking..."

"I'm honored to answer any question, sir." He told me.

"Well then..." I began to speak. "You broke your oath by killing your king, you had a deep sexual relationship with your sister, you pushed an 8 year old boy out of a window and made him a cripple, and you killed many people. And yet... You're here in Heaven. How?"

Jaime smiled. That was reassuring for me, as it seemed he was not offended by the question. "Well... I wasn't here from the start." He responded. "I was actually in Hell for a period of time. One day, I got tired from the constant torture and just decided to leave. Not without difficulty, demons chased after me and I was basically a fugitive. I spent 10 years being hunted down, 10 years of hiding. I never gave up hope."

"Hope?"

"Hope that I can be redeemed. That the cycle of good people and bad people wasn't true. The hope that people can change and that what they lived for wasn't all who they were. And lo and behold, I traversed the entirety of Hell and found the entrance to Purgatory, where I spent years being subjected to various challenges for the sake of cleansing my soul. Purgatory is the road to redemption, and I made it to the top of its mountain. The only hydration I ever drank during that period being my own blood and sweat. I faced parts of myself I didn't want to at the time, I faced things that challenged me, and I accepted everything that it threw at me because I believed that I could change for the better. And...here I am."

When he finished, the light reflected on his armor shined like the sun.

"You know, some people in Hell tell my journey in an almost mythological sense." Jaime added. "That I spent 100 years and several decades on my journey. No, that is untrue. It was 1 year in Hell, 10 years of being hunted in Hell, 4 years of Purgatory, and 1 year of being here."

"Why do you think people overestimate your story?" I asked.

"Well, it's a hopeful story. And I'll admit, 100 years sounds more noble and hopeful, but it is unrealistic. But if it was 100 years, I think I still wouldn't have given up. That's what people always look for, even in the worst of times. Hope."

Jaime's face looked lost in wonder before speaking again.

"You know, Purgatory was locked behind Lucifer himself. It is a place unreachable by simple mortals. You are expected to stay in your place forever. Let me tell you, Michael, neither God or the Devil believe in redemption. That's why they locked up Purgatory. You are what you are when you die. Death isn't the end, it is judgement, and an unfair one it is."

"You are wrong, Jaime." I said. "God created Purgatory. She made it for the chance of the people in Hell to come back, specifically the Fallen Angels."

"Then why was it locked up?"

"I don't know, but whatever it is, the Fallen Angels did not willingly go into Purgatory. They stayed in Hell."

"So you're telling me God believes in redemption?"

"Actually, no." I said. I did not elaborate. I knew that ever since Kyon's death, Haruhi believed in forgiveness no longer. "There's a war coming, Jaime, and you're all going to fight in it."

"I know. The Angels keep reminding us."

"Why fight for a system you know doesn't work? A system that doesn't believe in change."

"Because of the innocent, Michael. Look around you. If the Devil comes, all you see in this paradise will be lost. Many will be left without comfort if the Devil invades. And let me tell you, I always cared for them, innocent or otherwise. I'm going to protect others, for that is my oath."

For a moment, Jaime stood as the righteous knight you see in tales.

...

The Heaven and Hell armies will attempt to invade one another. It is not a matter of an exact location, no one knows where the battle will happen. But whoever gets to the enemy's realm first will proclaim that realm to be the battlefield.

The only way to for either side to enter each other's realm is what stands between them, Purgatorio. And that's where they'll enter. Who knows, maybe Purgatory will be the battlefield instead if none make it to any realm.

Haruhi descended from her throne and called upon her army of 1 billion.

"Tonight, this mummer's farce will end at last." She spoke. "Do not do me wrong and spare any lives of the ones who live in flame. Pray all they can, confess all the sins they want, they will not gain my forgiveness. Give them my wrath, like a flood that cleans the world."

7PM, the Heaven Army started marching towards the entrance of Purgatory, located in the 1st circle, the moon. They are passing by every circle for everyone to see, and are currently at the 4th.

We were still at the 2nd.

"It's too late, Michael." MLK told me. "You can't stop her once she starts moving."

"I will not sit by and risk the double-deaths of millions!" I fired back.

"You tried convincing her, but she doesn't listen. What do you hope to achieve now?"

"I..." I can't give up now. I've barely gotten anything done. In an act of desperation, I said. "I'm going to head into Purgatory."

"Huh?" MLK was confused.

"Purgatory isn't exactly blocked in Heaven, right? Only Hell."

"That's true, but no one in heaven really goes into Purgatory because, well, why do you need to be redeemed? You're here."

"I seek not of redemption, I seek to stop bloodshed. The mountain of Purgatory is vast, but the sins that weigh on Haruhi are pardoned purely because she's God. I do not expect Purgatory to work on her." It was then I had a realization. "But Purgatory was made for the Fallen Angels. So if the Devil and his Hell Army enter... They have the chance for change."

"God won't allow it." MLK stated. "She doesn't see that in those who reside in fire. Plus, redemption won't take place in a single night, it can span centuries."

"But..." I was defeated. "There has to be some way..."

"War is inevitable, Michael. Purgatorio is going to be a battlefield. All because people refuse to forgive. Like you, Michael, and Com Insydeme."

"Do not say that wretched man's name to me, MLK." I said with venomous rage.

"The point is, there's nothing you can do now."

I scoffed. I immediately headed back to the horses we took from the 5th. I hopped on and went back to MLK, who looked at me in confusion. I said. "But still, I want to hope for a better outcome. That's what we do."

And thus, I rode off into the 1st circle.

I found the door within the 2nd that leads to the 1st. Me and my horse entered inside.

The place was dark, the ground was grey rock, and the souls here are just chilling. But I had no time to observe, I had to keep riding.

I keep going straight until I see a large wooden door, shining red light. Above the door is a sign that reads: "Justice does not descend from its own pinnacle."

This is it. The entrance to Purgatory.

I look behind me to what is probably the last time I'll see Heaven. The moon is dark and yet the souls shine blue. And weirdest of all, it actually smells like cheese.

"Okay, horse." I was talking to it. I think I'm getting desperate for company. "Your new name will be Marlon, because I kinda miss my brother. Let us ride into the unknown. For the innocent, for justice, for death's ending."

Me and Marlon slowly entered the door to Purgatory, and entered The Garden of Eden.

...

Gamebang POV

"Are you actually going to confront God's army and tell her to marry you...?" I asked Lucifer, who was tying his tie, dressed in a fancy suit for the occasion. "Like dude, we're all lonely people, but she's rejected you too many times now."

"And yet, my heart tells me to keep going." Lucifer responded.

"Don't listen to your heart right now." I buried myself in the comforts of his couch. "Listen to your brain and think about this, kid. Your heart is filled with emotion, and emotion can be wrong."

"I can't help it, Gamebang." He looked at me like a broken man. "Even after defeat, I still seek her and only her. No one else."

"Because you're not happy, damn it." I feel as if I was speaking to myself. "You rely on her for happiness even though she will break your heart once more. You don't desire love, you desire happiness. And if you're a degenerate, maybe her breasts more so. You look to someone who gave you a bit of happiness and see them as happiness itself, and your only destination is heartbreak."

"I've gone too far, Gamebang." He finished his tie. "I am self aware of my own folly and yet I do not fight back against it. I love her, and I'll keep going even if failure is guaranteed. To even have her skin touch against mine, I would've reached someplace higher than paradise."

"Jesus man." My hand was on my face. "You're obsessed! You can't think of anyone except her!"

"What about you, Gamebang?" He looked at me. "You spent a lifetime longing for a woman who loved you not, so you searched for love in other people, and when they simply weren't her you broke their hearts and left them behind. Do not forget what you are in Hell for."

"Yeah well here's the difference between you and me, kid." I stood up and looked him right in the eye with frustration. "I didn't let my flaws ruin my life, even when I tried. At the end, I paid my debt and went on to improve myself. And my feelings for her? I hate her and I love her. To this day, I still have mixed feelings. But what you forget is that I loved all of them! Aqua, Venti, all of them. I broke their hearts and I made sure I faced the consequences, and spent my time becoming a better person for my daughter, and now for the people around me."

"Your sins aren't abolished just because you stopped masturbating."

"No, they aren't. But I don't need the forgiveness of some system that doesn't believe in forgiveness. I forgive myself. What about you, Lucifer? Do you feel guilty about the torture of all these people? About the Rebellion? About your own feelings?"

"You shut your mouth or I will have you erased." He snapped at me.

"Just so you know, I've noticed there's nothing actually blocking Purgatory except you and your big Devil body!" I recently made this observation. "You're the only obstacle! Which is why I think the universe does believe in redemption, but you don't! Why? Is it because you want to believe everyone here is as unredeemable as you? Just so you know, you could simply just descend from here and go into Purgatory and change for the better! So why haven't you!?"

"Because if I rule Hell, I can be closer to becoming a deity like her! Then I can stand as her equal! Then she can be mine!"

"No its because you are afraid of entering Purgatory!"

"Then why am I going to command my army to enter it tonight!"

"Because you need an army to defend you from the birds of change in Purgatorio! You reject change, you reject redemption, and you reject it for everyone else! Because you're guilty, Lucifer! A man like me can see that! You're not going to face whatever Purgatory throws at you, you're going to charge right ahead."

"Nonsense!"

"You're a man riddled with guilt of your sins and think he cannot change, and simultaneously a man who desires happiness above all else. So what? You go on this little love quest of yours to make yourself feel better. You better be thankful God is easily forgiving."

"Enough of this!" Lucifer shouted. "Out of my domain, or I will have your soul erased. Just you wait until I finally get her hand in marriage."

And just like that, he threw me out of the Devil's body and back onto the icy floor. It's a shame, it seemed we got along pretty well a while ago. But I guess the difference between me and him and is that I believe in forgiveness.

Ah, fuck this, I'm going back to Cersei and her little gang. At least that's more entertaining than an incel.

I don't need their forgiveness, I have my own and the people around me. Fuck God, fuck Satan, fuck the afterlife.

During the entire talk with Lucifer, Cersei's followers have already gathered their little snake weapons and have returned to the inside of the Giant. I went back there as well to see whats going on.

I entered the mouth of the Giant and returned to the stomach, Kazuma was there, holding a snake. Everyone was, except Cersei who continued to sit on her throne of spears.

"Now that we are equipped with weapons, the time is almost nigh." Cersei spoke.

"Light Yagami has communicated with me that he is also ready up in Heaven. The plan to detonate all the Wildfire barrels will begin when the Hell Army has left for Purgatory. Once one barrel has exploded, every other will follow, swallowing this realm in green flame. And same for Heaven once Light activates it. The Giant will protect us from the flame, and once deemed appropriate to exit we will begin our revolution against the demons left here, and then we move into Heaven to do the same. Once it is all said and done and the afterlife has been burnt beyond oblivion, I will take the throne of the Emyprean."

So this is it, huh, once Lucifer and his army leaves, everything will be in flame. There will be a war in Purgatory, Heaven and Hell will burn, and...

Why should I care? What did this place ever do to me other than judge me for things I've moved past from? Let it burn, damn it.

I left the Giant's insides and stared at the architecture of Hell. Pure red mountains. Flame that never extinguishes. The souls of the damned.

It's funny to think about. The 1st layer of Hell, the people in Limbo, most of them never actually did anything wrong and were there by an error or an inconsistency. And in a few moments, they'll be blown to green fire and die again, and they never did anything to deserve it.

Hell, some people in the 2nd layer were just horny idiots. Some of them don't even deserve Wildfire. Heck, now that I think about it, there are people who have been tortured here for eternity and have already endured pain beyond their sins to the point they're just another victim.

At what point does Hell devolve from punishment to just torture?

But who cares. It doesn't matter. The universe decides their fate, I don't. We're all bad people, I guess. Who gives a fuck, let their souls be erased.

...

...

...

And yet, I still ran to Lucifer's army in an attempt to stop him.

Perhaps that's another flaw of mine, caring about others. Caring if even one person died. To save lives no matter what reason. God... That's just me, isn't it. Curse it. Curse this ability to always believe in good. Why must I feel the need to help others? I can't let these people die... Damn it all, I must save them all.

"LUCIFER!" I shouted. I ran across his entire army, dressed in red flaming armor and spears made of the ice from the 9th. Lucifer was inside his giant Devil form with three heads. I immediately climbed as fast as I can. I reached the living room to see him in armor. "LUCIFER! LISTEN!"

He looked at me confused. "Gamebang?"

"Listen... All of your hopes for happiness is laid upon God herself, but you will become more miserable with the 100th rejection. And even then you won't give up, because she's all you have, or that's what you think. Think about this!"

"Gamebang, what are you-"

"Lucifer, look, we're all just horny little goons just grabbing at every single shit we see to activate that little button in our brain that will say 'You are happy.' But for fucks sake... The only person you should be trying to love is yourself. That's who you should be obsessed with. Not some girl who will never even notice you. Don't go into Purgatory for war and stay here." I only told him to stay so that Cersei wouldn't activate the Wildfire, but everything else was from the heart. "Lucifer... You need to forgive yourself and remind yourself that you are worthy of being loved. You are worthy of someone else, not just this person who you don't even truly know. You are worthy of love beyond this farce you think is love."

The Devil looked at me with discontent. He walked up to me. "I'll kill myself before she never even looks my direction again. It does not matter if I have to do it by force, she will be mine."

Lucifer walked past me and to his army, leaving me alone and frozen.

No...

"The time has come, my warriors." Lucifer announced to his army of 1 billion. "Let us create the wedding of a lifetime."

Boom. Boom. Boom. The sounds of the army marching echoed throughout the entirety of Hell. It is too late, the army has begun to walk into Purgatorio, entering under the ice.

I jumped off the giant Devil form and ran back to the Giant that contained Cersei. I can't do anything about the Heaven wildfires, but I can do something about the Hell ones. If I can just kill them all, no one will be able to activate the explosion.

I need a weapon to murder them.

And that's when it called to me. The Flaming Sword...

I felt its presence calling out to me from behind. Stuck in stone, waiting for someone to pull it out.

And I knew that no one but the Arch Angel Michael could pull it out, but even then... I just couldn't control myself. It was calling me, it's calling me!

There it stood, white as Angel, and no flame around it. But if I could just...

I gripped the handle, it was cold. But it kept calling for me, begging me to release it from its sheath. It has chosen me!

My arms move, my body uses its entire power, my hands don't let go, and I hear the sound of ancient steel unsheathed.

The sword instantly erupted in flames, but it didn't burn me, it strengthened my resolve. It's heavy, but the sword gives me the strength to hold it up to the air and shine its light across the land! I have unsheathed the sword that defeated the devil, I have achieved the impossible!

... Yeah... Yeah I don't know what to do with this thing. Why do I have it. It would've been easier to grab a rock to kill Cersei. Actually, why was I the one who managed to grab it? I'm not anything special?

And then I look to see the entire Hell Army gone, all in Purgatory. This only means one thing...

I immediately run for the Giant, only to see that it wasn't in the place it was a few minutes ago. I have lost it. I don't know where it is. Hell, it may have went somewhere it can ignite the Wildfire. Oh shit oh fuck, I can't do anything. What the fuck can this sword even do!? It sure as hell can't make me fucking fly!

I start running in some random direction, leaving behind a trail of sweat. The stress is getting to me. In a few moments maybe, everywhere I look will be consumed in green fire. Zillions will die, and I can't do anything. Oh god, I can't do anything.

"GRUAAA!!" I vomited on the ground from the pressure. I couldn't handle it.

I look at my reflection on my own puke. A man. A broken man. A sad man. And yet, a man who will not dare to see others be harmed. And a man who simply wishes to return to the world, away from this trouble. That's me.

And I see on the reflection, behind me was an explosion of green flame. It's sound was like the roar of a dragon, and it deafened my ears for a while.

Chapter 6: Light of the Seven

Jaime Lannister POV

It was time for the Heaven Army to march into Purgatory. I grouped up with my platoon and held a shining sword.

Honestly, even after a long time of being here, it felt good to hold things with my sword hand. Before I died, it was sliced off. I suppose I kind of deserved it after what I did, but damn did it almost break me down.

I stand side by side with my fellow soldiers. It's been a long time since I've entered a war, and I've been anticipating using my skills on actual enemies.

Oh crud, actually, wait, I forgot my helm.

"Be right back guys." I told the soldiers beside me. "Watch over my spot." And thus I began to run for my helm.

I arrived at the main training grounds of the 5th. A bronze sort of military base, but not completely since it also acted like some luxurious inn. I went inside my chambers and scoured my cabinets. I know what the helm looks like, a white cover for your entire head that resembles a bird. I was searching really quick and ended up messing my room quite a bit.

Ah! Found it. Gotta head back quickly to the formation so they don't leave without me.

As I run across the land, my only thoughts are of getting there as fast as possible and being only the best fighter I can provide to her grac- why did this weird dude holding an apple stop me.

"Hello, Kingslayer." The man said. He wore a suit and a tie, had light-brown hair and a face that unsettled me.

"Uh... Hi, sir." I responded. "Please excuse me, I have an army to attend to." I tried moving past him, but he keeps stopping me. At this rate, I was going to miss my platoon. "Sir, please. I am a soldier."

"I know." He said.

I sighed out of annoyance. "Do you have a name, sir?"

He grinned. "Light Yagami."

"Sir Yagami, I need to fight for our God. It is a requirement. I'm going to defend the very land we both stand upon."

"Why don't you come with me, Ser Jaime?" He said.

"What? That's ridiculous. Why would I-"

From his pocket, he brought out a matchstick that burnt green flame. There, my heart sank. He looked at me with only the most menacing of faces. There was no mistaking it, it was Wildfire.

"Walk with me, Jaime Lannister." Light Yagami said. "We have much to discuss."

...

At this point, half of the Heaven Army was already inside Purgatory, and my platoon was included. I had missed my shot at going with them. I was disheartened, but I was a hostage at this moment. Me and Light Yagami walked across the Heavens, ending up at the 2nd. We sat across the golden diner room.

"So... You're the man who escaped Hell." He said to me.

"Yes I am..." I responded.

"Then it will enlighten you to know that I am just like you. I also went through Purgatory." Light said.

"Really, now." Something about him didn't scream redeemed. "I'm glad your soul was cleansed."

"Right..." He said. "Yeah, not exactly."

"Huh?"

"Turns out, it's easy to trick the mountain of Purgatory into thinking you've changed."

"What are you..."

"It's easy act and think like another person. A person with a different sin, a different story, a fake one. And the mountain will believe it. They're not deities who can read your mind, they're simply like us. That is the natural flaw of this system, they're just as vulnerable as humans. Just like God, and her ever expanding quest for vengeance."

"Don't insult our creator." I fired back.

"Oh? But I thought you said this system was flawed."

"It is, but-"

"I suppose it isn't flawed for you. You forced your way here."

"That's not true! I worked my hardest to get here! And I think everyone should be given the chance I was given! For this afterlife to be fair to change!"

"...Good answer." He leaned back on his chair. "Now do you think your sister can be a good leader of the afterlife and believe in your philosophy and bring it fruition?"

"My sister?" I was confused.

"Cersei Lannister."

"No. I don't." I answered. "Cersei only wants power. She lusts for power. She only wants to be above everyone, she would never bring my thoughts to fruition."

"I see..."

"But... I want to believe she can change. If she just went through Purgatorio-"

"I'm afraid it's a bit too late for that, Kingslayer." He stopped me. "Cersei is more power hungry than ever. She is no better than the current system, maybe even worse."

"What do you mean...?"

Light Yagami proceeded to whistle. A few seconds later, the Angel Aladiel came to us.

"Aladiel!" I said. "Please hel-"

Aladiel proceeded to get on all fours like a dog beside Light. His tongue exposed and dripping saliva.

"Good boy, Aladiel." Light said as he gave him a headpat. "Bark for Cersei. She is coming soon."

"WOOF!" Aladiel said.

"Like I said earlier, Jaime. The people in the system are just as vulnerable as us, as humans. Look at him." He gave Aladiel a potato chip from his pocket. "Even Angels give in to temptation."

"Cersei... What is happening?" I said.

"Cersei is a fool and only desires power." Light stated. "To rule the afterlife and make it her whorehouse."

"I'd expect that from her." I responded.

I've moved past the manipulation my sister had done onto me. I've moved past her in general and all my sins. Safe to say, my opinion of her isn't positive. "So what? I'm guessing you know all about her scheme. Are you going to save the afterlife?"

Light laughed like a maniac. "You could say that... She wants power, Jaime. The power to rule this place. And I've been helping her to the point I snuck into Heaven to fulfill her plan."

I will unsheath my sword once he stops talking and end this farce.

"But..." Light continued. "The power of rule the afterlife... I'm not letting her have it." He stood, towering over me like some dangerous beast. "The one who will rule the afterlife will be ME."

Suddenly, Aladiel took me in his arms and held me tightly, capturing me. All the while, he was barking. I couldn't escape from his grasp, Angels are more powerful than men.

"Cersei will certainly bend the knee to me once she sees her old lover held captive..." Light said. "Thank you, Aladiel. I will pay your promise soon enough. Now take this man above and in front of this golden castle for the fireworks show." Light looked at me. "You don't want to miss the Wildfire."

Aladiel flew me up to get a wide view of the castle. We floated in the air for an uncomfortable amount of minutes.

"Let me go, damn you!" I shouted.

"Woof woof!"

"You're an Angel, damn you! Why have you succumbed to lust!?"

"Woof woof!"

It's useless. This fool only follows orders. What has Cersei done to him.

The castle sits as it always did. High and shining, a mighty place for rest to those who have achieved glory. The golden walls shine with the light of Heaven, and the people go about their day, living as a community.

And then, the sound of a dragon came from below, and the entire castle was engulfed in green flame. A home for many, destroyed in a second. And the people, dying again. People ran and screamed while covered in Wildfire. Pieces of the castle fell on the innocent like ants.

It was here that I stopped resisting Aladiel. I was defeated. I couldn't save them, damn it. I couldn't fucking save them... Their souls have been eradicated and now they'll end up at nothing. This horrible moment to sit by and watch as innocents die, and you can't do anything about it. That's a feeling worse than death.

And even then, the castle wasn't the only one. From behind me, everything else was covered in green fire.

...

Guizhong POV

I... What happened? I'm covered in...blood? Blood... The floor is...gone. Just the white cloud ground of Heaven... And it's covered in blood... Why would Heaven have blood in its clouds?

VRAAUUMM!! That... That was the sound of a dragon... At least it sounded like one. *VRAAAUUMMM!!* There's multiple roars everywhere... It's deafening my ears...

I look up, and the golden castle is destroyed. Pieces scattered everywhere, covered in viridescent blaze. The people...They're running for their safety. Why? This is Heaven, why are we hurt?

"Ngh!" It hurts to stand! I can't! My leg has been impaled by a broken piece of the wall! "HELP! SOMEBODY HELP!"

Suddenly, someone took my hand. "Don't worry, Guizhong, we're getting you out of here."

I recognized that voice. It was Martin Luther King Jr. He took me and carried me across the chaos. There were broken walls falling all around us like rain.

Eventually, we reached the outside. There, I saw a few people I assume MLK saved. Tolkien, Ai Hoshino, a bunch of people. MLK placed me down on the ground.

"This is going to hurt like a motherfucker." MLK told me as he examined the piece of brick impaling my leg. "But I'm going to save you, so bear with me."

What proceeded was a 1 minute speedrun of taking out the gold brick from my leg, placing medication on all the other fancy medical exercises on my wound, and then patching it up with cloth. I was screaming the entire time. But it was done, and my leg was safe, although I can't walk with only one leg. MLK left to get more survivors from the wreckage.

VRAAAUUMMM!! The sound came from behind me, far from our location. The green explosions were everywhere we looked, destroying the very architecture of the 2nd itself. It's almost as if we were in a green Inferno.

"RUN!!!" MLK picked me up and carried me as everyone ran away from the destroyed castle. Behind us, another explosion went off, and I felt the shockwave from behind. Anywhere my eyes set, there was fire and blood, things that shouldn't be in paradise.

"WE'RE HEADING INTO THE 1ST!" MLK shouted. We ran straight for the door that leads us to the 1st sphere.

It was no different, the moon was also on fire. The ground kept exploding green flame, and many were being erased.

"HEY!" A teal haired girl ran up to us, her arm scarred from the chaos. "HELP!"

"Name?" MLK asked.

"Sucrose." She responded.

"Come with us and live." MLK said. She didn't question it, she followed immediately. We left the 1st, then the 2nd, then came for the 3rd. It was also on fire. Then the 4th, the 5th, the 6th, the 7th, the 8th, the 9th, and the Empyrean... Heaven was burning.

We eventually settled back into the 5th.

"Damn it..." MLK said. "What the fuck is going on..."

"Are we going to die...?" Ai Hoshino asked.

"I don't want to die again..." I said.

"I still have so many things to do here..." Sucrose said sadly.

Oh Morax... If only you were here.

"HELP!" A voice from above called. We all looked up to see a man in armor being carried by an Angel.

"Jaime... Aladiel?" MLK said.

"ALADIEL HAS TURNED EVIL!" Jaime yelled. "HELP!"

"We gotta help him!" Tolkien said to all of us. "It's Jaime!"

"Alright then." MLK said. "Everyone, do something!"

Whilst everyone started throwing random objects at the Aladiel, I remembered that we were in the 5th, which was basically a military base. I began to search around the burning rubble for anything we could use, a sword or anything.

Even as the God of Dust, I wasn't particularly powerful ability wise, so I mostly assisted Morax with my intellect on technology. So there has to be something I can engineer around here...

Ah! Underneath the remains of a building, I found some swords and rope! And just like that, I knew what I could make.

After a few minutes of assembling my creation, I went back to the squad to tell them my idea. "Guys! Grab these swords! And use the light from Heaven to reflect on the steel! Aim it for Aladiel and block his sight!" I took out my weapon, the rope was attached to two swords, like a slingshot, and I carried a giant piece of brick from the rubble as a bullet. "Someone who can aim really well has to use this!"

"I'll do it." Out of nowhere came the original Electro Archon, Raiden Makoto, who has awakened from her soul form in the 6th and back to her physical body. Probably because the 6th was being blown up.

I threw the slingshot to her and gave everyone a sword. We all started using the light of Heaven and the steel, aiming the light at Aladiel's eyes. It seems to be working as he's losing his sense of direction. Jaime looks quite pleased to be helped. It's working, he can't see anything!

"Now!" I yelled at Makoto.

She pulled back the gold brick in the slingshot, her eyes locking on to her target, and bam! She shot her shot.

Bullseye! It hit Aladiel in the head, knocking him unconscious, falling to the ground and letting Jaime go from his grasp.

Both hit the ground, but Jaime had armor, so he was mostly unharmed.

Jaime got up as Aladiel's body landed beside him. He ran to us.

"Jaime!" Tolkien was happy to see him. "I almost thought you were a goner."

"Me too, but I'm still here buddy." Jaime said. "Thank you, everyone."

Jaime was about to run away from us until... "Jaime!" MLK called out. "What the hell is happening!?"

Jaime turned around and faced us. "The end times." He said coldly. "Some people have rigged the entire afterlife with barrels of Wildfire."

"But why would they do that?" Sucrose asked.

"Two words, my sister." Jaime's face expressed disgust. "I'm going back to Hell to kill her again. But until then, I have to find a certain someone here. The Imposter in paradise."

"Let us help!" I said.

"Don't be foolish, young lady. This is my duty."

"This is our home too!" I said. "Our paradise! We will not stand by!"

Jaime looked troubled, and then looked at Tolkien, who nodded to him.

Jaime turned back to all of us. "Help me get to Purgatory, and I can guarantee your survival."

"Done." MLK took out the sword I gave him. "Let's descend."

Jaime nodded. "Tolkien, stay close to me. I'll protect you."

"Thank you, Jaime." Tolkien responded.

"The man I'm looking for currently is Light Yagami. He wears a suit and has brown hair and his facial expression is like a demon." Jaime stated. "I am his hostage to my sister. No doubt, he will be looking for me, now that Aladiel is knocked out." He wore his helm. "Come with me and kill the man who doesn't belong in Heaven."

We began to move, and we ended up at the 4th sphere. Constantly avoiding the Wildfire explosions everywhere, while Makoto was carrying Aladiel's body. There was smoke everywhere, and rubble and corpses. Heaven shouldn't feel this hot. Sometimes, when another explosion occurs, my ears will deafen for a few minutes. The shockwave from constant explosions will sometimes make me lose my balance.

Suddenly, multiple Angels landed in front of us. At least ten appeared, holding larger swords than ours and more armor than Jaime.

"On the authority of the God of the new world, Light Yagami, all of you are required to hand in Jaime Lannister." One of them said.

"You're his followers..." Jaime said with disgust.

"Your sister also has followers too, you know."

"And I take it you're going to fight them."

"No, there won't be any fighting done once we get our hands on you, Kingslayer. You're our gift."

"We will never give Jaime to you!" Ai yelled at them.

"Careful now, pretty one. I can snap all of your necks in a second- AAAAHHHH!!" The Angel was hit with a bolt of electricity. I looked behind me to see Raiden Makoto with her sword, beaming with thunder.

The Angel recovered quickly from the attack and looked at us with fury. "KILL THEM ALL! TAKE THE KINGSLAYER BY FORCE!"

Makoto went in front of us and fought all of them. Since she was an Archon, she could handle all these enemies at once, but we did not know how long she could keep fighting. We had to think of a solution.

As the sounds of steel and grunts and lightning surrounded us, we were scrambling to think of a way out.

"Aren't you an old God!?" Sucrose shouted to me.

"I-Its complicated!" I responded. "I didn't even have that much powers, I was just Morax's IT support!"

"But you were the God of Dust, right!?"

"Yeah?"

"Alright!" Sucrose suddenly pulled out a few flasks out of her pockets. I have no idea how those fit in there, but she immediately started doing science stuff, combining chemicals and liquids I did not know the names of. "Quick! Put some Archon energy in here!" She handed me a flask that had boiling liquid.

I did as she asked of me and used my powers to infuse this stuff with Archon Energy. I gave it back to her. "Does anyone have anything that can work as some kind of water balloon that can easily explode? Something at least water proof or will keep this concoction sealed until sudden impact."

"I have some extra handkerchiefs that are pretty resistant towards liquid." Ai said. She brought one out, it was very stylized. "I keep them with me in case I sweat too much at a performance."

"That'll work!" Sucrose said. She grabbed one handkerchief from Ai and crafted a little ball full of the liquid she had made, which radiated some of my Archon Energy. She handed it to Jaime. "Throw it at one of the Angels." She told him.

Jaime took it and aimed directly for one that was currently fighting Makoto. His eyes remained focus, target locked. With one clean move, he threw the little cloth grenade at the Angel. For a moment, I was worried it might hit Makoto instead, but it directly hit the Angel's head. The handkerchief exploded and the liquid came out and covered the Angel's face. It proceeded to melt his skin off, spreading to the rest of his body like an infection. Before long, he was just a red man. The Angel fell to the ground and Makoto looked at us, an expression that told us to make more. She continued fighting the others.

Sucrose speedran her cooking and I was swiftly infusing each of her flasks with Archon Energy. Ai kept bringing out her handkerchiefs and giving them to Sucrose to make our little cloth grenades. Everytime one was done, she tossed it to Jaime, who threw them at the ones fighting Makoto closely. Jaime only missed one shot for all of his throws.

All of the Angels were hit, their skin melted, their body fallen to the floor. Except one, who was fighting Makoto with all his might. But we didn't need to make a grenade this time. Makoto pushed this Angel into an area that immediately exploded from Wildfire, killing the Angel, their body turned to dust in front of her eyes as she covered herself from the flames.

"There will be more coming for me." Jaime said. "We must move quickly. It's only a matter of time before Light himself comes for me."

...

[Insert GenshinPlace member] POV

"Great, she left us." I told Com. "Well, if she wishes death, then let her be. She wanted to come here anyway." A shame though, she was really great with the bow.

"We have to find her." Com said. "I can't stand by and just let her die!"

"Com, she wanted this."

"But something wasn't right!" He said with upmost certainty. "She acted different!"

"People in Hell are annoying, that's why they're in Hell. Of course she'd be annoyed by whoever that was."

"But-"

"Com, leave it be. It is what it is. We have much more important matters to attend to." Like the war to come.

I remember this morning, Aqua ordered me on behalf of Atlantis and PolandBall combined to venture here, in the Inferno. To save a bazillion dead lives in the afterlife. I always follow the Princess's commands, so I accepted. Com was trying to not commit war crimes in Atlantis, and I was looking after him. I informed him that I'd be off on a mission to Hell and to be on his best behavior. But with the gained knowledge that everything in Dante's Divine Comedy was real, he wanted to go along with me to enter Purgatorio, a place for redemption. Com still feels tremendous guilt over his actions with Alizeh, but at some point it just gets annoying to hear. Like yeah man, you caused the deaths of infinite and made Michael Jackson mad, deal with it.

Ah who am I kidding, I can't be that harsh to him. It's like Oppenheimer, he never understood the full severity of his actions until it was too late.

But I don't think what he needs is to enter some magical mountain where he'll be put through a mystical American Ninja Warrior course so he can be deemed clean. Even if he does that, there's no guarantee Michael would forgive him. His soul will be clean in the spiritual sense, yes, but what else? The redemption Purgatorio offers is the type to make you enter Heaven, not the one to make you a better man in the world of the living. Com is desperate for anything, just to be considered a good man, to condone for his actions. But he does not understand that entering the realm of death is the answer of change to the ones who have life, for living is harder than death.

My duty here is to simply try and stop the war between Heaven and Hell, although I think I'm doing a pretty shit job. We've been stuck on the entrance to the 8th, on this fucking cliff where we'll die if we fall. They've probably started fighting by now. I don't have enough info to know what's happening. I've just been playing rock paper scissors here with Com as he tries to convince me to find that Collei girl.

Actually now that I think about it, Gamebang did mention to me him tutoring a girl who's name sounded like Collei. She lives in Avidya Forest and can't read apparently.

Oh god no did I fuck up.

...Naaaahhh, it couldn't have been the same girl.

Anyway, Aqua mentioned to me that if I ever needed to urgently return to the world of the living, I should pray to her friend "Eris." Although she said she didn't recommend it. She didn't state why, but I knew it was because Aqua was jealous of Eris for having more followers in her religion, and was still a Goddess while Aqua wasn't. Aqua seemed to really hammer down the fact she uses pads, which you know, okay I guess?

"Alright, I'm going back to the previous circles to find something that can make us survive this cliff." I said. "Come on, Com."

We both began to walk back to the 7th. We arrive at its lake full of people fighting one another. You'd think they'd get bored of punching each other for eternity.

"Maybe we can use the water." Com suggested.

"I don't know about that-" Suddenly, I felt a rumbling on the ground. It seems the people in the 7th noticed too, for they stopped punching each other. Com felt it too. Then, the ground started becoming warmer, which was weird because Hell was already hot.

VRAAAUUMMM!! Boom, a part of the 7th erupted in a green explosion. It roared like a dragon. The people in front of us were thrown in the air and burnt in the air. Bodies landed all around us. This is the first time I've witnessed actual death in the afterlife.

VRAAAUUMMM!! More areas around us started exploding, consuming the 7th with green fire, replacing Hell's red orange. What the fuck is going on?

In the distance, I see an entire horde of people running. People from previous circles, who have escaped their prison to run for their lives. I see what's chasing them behind, a wave of green flame. But they were too slow to avoid it, their bodies burnt in the green like an ant infestation immediately destroyed once you use an ant killer spray. The wave is coming for us, we make a run for it. Some people in the 7th were still stuck in their little river, and couldn't escape from the green doom.

Eventually, we all ran back to the cliff of the 8th. I know we can't survive the fall, but we can't survive the flame either.

"What do we do!?" Com asked in terror.

I stare down at the cliff and the darkness at the bottom.

I deem it unfeasible to jump down there and I try walking back, but the hordes of people only ensure that I move closer and closer to the edge of the cliff, the amount of scared runners overwhelm me, surrounding me, tightening me. We're all stuck together, and yet we move together, and the green wall of fire only moves closer and burns more people by the second. I can't breathe, there's too many people around.

Eventually, my right foot feels no ground, nothing, and my body feels gravity pulling me down.

Hundreds of people fall down in the cliff, screaming for their safety. Up there, the ones left behind are burnt to a crisp. I look up and see burnt bodies falling down alongside us.

I close my eyes and prepare to die in the afterlife to this fall. What happens when I die? I'm not exactly dead, I only entered Hell. So... Do I end up back here or...

It doesn't matter, I'm falling to my death.

BAM! But I didn't. I didn't die. I landed on something soft and familiar. I opened my eyes to see a bunch of us have landed on a mountain of corpses. These bodies are black like space, no doubt burnt. Even their ashes get on my clothes. I look around me and see no end to the raining of frightened people and corpses.

Then- *VRAAAUUMMM!!!* An explosion erupts at the very collection of corpses we stood upon, sending all of us to the air. I land on a floor of ice, my body injured beyond relief. Where the fuck is Com?

VRAAAUUMMM!! It doesn't end. Everywhere I look, there's more explosions. More people are dying again. Eventually, some of the ice floor I stand on starts breaking and melting due to the flames all around us.

I run, I don't know where, but I just ran. Everywhere I looked, someone died. Hell actually smelled of the dead now, for it was littered with corpses.

An explosion happens right in front of me, it's bright and green and hot. It consumed a bunch of people. The shockwave sent me to the ground. I had to get up immediately to keep running for my life. Each second, more explosions happened.

One explosion happened, and it resulted in a rain of blood for a few seconds. I was covered in crimson, and I screamed.

"HEY!" Com called out to me. He found me. "I- AH!" Flame erupted beside him and he was sent to the ground. I helped him up.

"From the looks of it, the Hell Army isn't even here anymore..." I said. We searched every circle, they had to be in the 9th, right? But they're not here anymore, so they went off to their war. I looked at Com with defeated eyes. "I have failed my mission. I need to return to Earth."

"WHAT!?" Com yelled. "BUT I NEED TO GO INTO PURGATORY!"

"COM! LOOK AROUND YOU!" I shouted with all my might. "EVERYTHING IS EXPLODING! WE FAILED! CHANCES ARE, PURGATORY IS ALSO IN DESTRUCTION!"

"BUT I CAME THIS FAR!"

"COM! YOU DON'T NEED SOME MAGIC MOUNTAIN TO MAKE YOU A GOOD FUCKING PERSON! IT'S EASIER TO DO IT ON ATLANTIS FOR FUCKS SAKE! IF GAMEBANG CAN DO IT, SO CAN YOU-"

"WELL I'M NOT GAMEBANG, AND I HAVE DONE WORSE THINGS-"

"FOR FUCKS SAKE LET IT GO!!" An explosion happened beside us and we almost fell.

I immediately took Com by my arms and held him tight.

"WHAT ARE YOU DOING!?" He shouted.

"Sending us home." I responded.

Follow Aqua's instructions on praying to Eris... Put both hands onto each other and close your eyes, and say the words.

"May luck and fortune be at my side, for my actions will be good aligned. For wisdom is the highest plane, for luck is nothing but the effort and knowledge one gains. Provide me with the wisdom to get through this day, give me the strength to blow this trouble away. So as long it's from you the assistance can vary, I pray for this blessing from you Goddess Eris!"

... Nothing happened. And Com is looking at me weird.

Aqua also said to do this if the prayer doesn't work.

"I'll tell everyone Eris pads her chest."

Suddenly, my body began to glow. I was going back to the living world. As long as I held Com in my arms, he'd go along with me. Aqua told me this.

"Hold on, Com, we're going home." I said.

"No... I can't..." Com said. "I need to go to Purgatory..."

"Com, I'm sorry, we're too late."

"... No, you told me back then at my lowest." Com's eyes sparkled. "It's never too late."

He headbutts my face and I am taken aback from the pain. My nose is bleeding, but even worse, I have let go of Com Insydeme. He starts running away.

"COM!" I yelled out. I need to hurry to him, I'm glowing brighter and brighter and it's only a matter of time before I disappea- "AH!"

An explosion happened in front of me, blocking my pursuit for Com. I watch behind the green smoke as he runs away from me. That foolish man, now a dead man sooner or later. And even then, I called out for him, desperate for him to come back, for I knew he did not deserve this.

"COM!!!"

My vision turned white, and I no longer felt the heat of Hell.

... I am back in Atlantis, on Aqua's throne room. I look behind me to see her majesty.

"Holy shit you actually did it." Aqua said to me. "You know, Eris was gonna do it anyway, it was just a slow process. But once you said that, she went as fast as the speed of light!"

I fall to my knees. "Com..."

"Uh, are you okay?" She asked. "What happened on the mission."

"I was too late... Hell is exploding."

"Holy shit really? That's metal as fuck."

"..."

"Wait, so you're saying the afterlife is fucked."

I nodded.

"... I uh, gotta make a call to Obama real quick, to let him know that he gotta pull Michael out of here immediately."

"Michael?"

"Oh uh- No! Don't worry about it! Your other friend is definitely not in the afterlife."

... I mean why would she lie to me. She's the Princess afterall. I trust her.

But maybe this is also because I can't think to lose another friend in there.

"Wait, where's Com?" Aqua asked. "I mean to ask him out on a date, hehehehehe..."

My hands cover my face. This weight on my emotions, it pulls me down further and further until I am drowning.

"[Insert GenshinPlace member]... Where is Com?"

...

Collei POV

As Azazel is flying me, flames that have the color of my hair erupt like fireworks all around us. I see the deaths of hundreds, maybe thousands. I hear them screaming, but the roars of the fire are louder. I couldn't blame you if you couldn't hear their cries for help, all I hear is a dragon.

"I did this." Azazel told me. "I placed the Wildfire barrels by order of Cersei."

"Why?" I asked.

"She thinks blowing up anything she sees will make her win the game of thrones. She is a fool. But it was a good way to destroy the afterlife, so I played along to her wishes."

"Your mission to destroy the entire afterlife and leave only nothing..." I said. "It's coming to fruition."

"In the end, I will win." Azazel said with utter confidence. "And I will need your help to destroy Purgatory."

The blood from the seal on my neck began to drip. The pain, it felt good.

"As long as you take me to my tutor, then I will do as you wish." I said.

As we flew further into Hell, the Wildfire explosions only got more and more intense. Hell was green now.

We entered the 9th circle, and see that the Hell Army has already left for Purgatory.

"They're all inside Purgatorio..." Azazel said. "You will obliterate their entire army and destroy the mountain of Purgatory. With your Archon Residue, anything is possible."

As we were flying, I spot something on the ground that made my heart flutter. Running amidst the chaos, and holding a strange burning sword.

"Gamebang..." I whispered.

"Oh, that's him." Azazel said.

As I was watching him from above, he was getting bombarded with Wildfire explosions. "NO!" I screamed. "SAVE HIM DAMN IT!"

"Will do." Azazel responded. He let go of my body and let me fall.

And as I saw the ground coming up towards me, I closed my eyes and let the blood escape from my seal. I open my eyes to purple smoke being emitted from it.

BOOM! And I make a landing, ending up in front of Gamebang and partially destroying the icy floor below me into a crater. I use my powers to create a shield that surrounds both of us, made out of pure energy. The purple walls of the protection I have made have no chance of breaking by Wildfire.

I look to Gamebang.

"Who... What... Why are who..." He said, confused.

It was here that I toned down on my abilities, and took away the purple from my eyes. And I gave him the smile I'm sure he would recognize.

His eyes widened, his jaw opened. "Collei...?"

"Hi."

For a full minute, he just stayed silent. I did too, since I was really happy to see him again.

And finally, he spoke. "WHAT THE FUCK ARE YOU DOING HERE!?"

"Well, I kinda need help with my literature homework." I stated. "So I came to get you!"

He went up to me. "Collei, this is a dangerous place you've entered. I... I need to get you out of here."

"But I have a deal to fulfill." I said.

"What deal?"

Azazel violently landed behind Gamebang. He looked to see him, and was confused.

"Me." Azazel answered the question. "You have your tutor now. I can hold him with me while we head into Purgatory."

"Take him." I said with purple eyes.

"Huh? AGH-" Gamebang was held by Azazel, unable to escape his grasp.

"A deal is a deal, Collei." Azazel told me.

"Yeah yeah, I know."

"COLLEI!" Gamebang was yelling. "WHAT ARE YOU DOING!?"

"I'm doing this to protect you." I responded.

"WHAT???"

"Collei, let's go." Azazel said. I nodded and held on to his hand, and the three of us flew away to go into Purgatorio.

The hole under the ice is near us, and we're getting so close to entering Purgatory. The time has come at long last.

"Not so fast." A voice called out to us.

And crash landed in front of us was a ten winged beast with features of insects. It's demonic eyes looked us with fury.

"Beelzebub..." Gamebang said. So that's who this is...

"I figured out your plan, Azazel." Beelzebub said. "The use of human sins to destroy the afterlife. Light Yagami and Cersei Lannister's Greed, Aladiel's Lust, my father's loneliness, God's hate, and that green haired girl's wrath."

"So what?"

"You encouraged most of these people to indulge in these sins, furthering their descent into a state of mind far deeper than Hell itself."

"I didn't have to do much." Azazel stated. "I just had to make them worse."

"You made my father obsessed. You allowed and contributed to the Wildfire. You encouraged Light Yagami to betray Cersei. You're the one who kept sneaking Aladiel to Cersei's cunt. You encouraged my father to kill that Kyon boy, which enraged God herself to the point of no return. And now, you have made that green haired girl to indulge in the most negative parts of herself."

Beelzebub summoned a sword made of blood and pointed it at Azazel. "It's always been you, hasn't it?"

"Like I said, I didn't put those traits into those people. I only made them worse."

"Yes. You increased their sins to the point they'd destroy the realm."

"If I didn't, then this place wouldn't be burning."

"But it is, you've won."

Azazel laughed. "Yeah, I guess I have."

He let go of me and Gamebang, and drew out his own sword, beaming with dark energy. Hate itself.

"So, daddy's girl." Azazel got in preparation position. "Try and stop me."

Beelzebub was angered by those words, but he took a deep breath. "For the ethical balance of the universe..."

He screamed as he charged towards Azazel. Their swords clashed. Azazel, superior and skilled in sword fighting is able to overwhelm Beelzebub. He is just barely keeping up with Azazel's skills. The Devil's child is primarily on the defensive, for the Fallen Angel reigns supreme over him.

As the sounds of steel colliding goes on in the background, Gamebang comes to me. "Collei! Come on! We need to get out of here! Out of Hell!"

"NO!" I screamed. "I NEED TO DESTROY!"

"Collei! Calm down! I'm safe!" Gamebang took my shoulders and shook me.

"NO YOU'RE NOT!"

"Collei- Wha..." Gamebang's hands felt the blood that spewed out of my seal. "What the hell..."

"IF I DON'T DO THIS, THEN I CAN'T SAVE YOU!"

"Collei, how is wreaking destruction gonna saving me!?" He said with frustration. "It's that little thing on your neck, damn it! I know it is!"

"SHUT UP! THE VOICES, THEY GIVE ME STRENGTH! THE POWER TO PROTECT OTHERS!" The adrenaline within me increased, my abilities for a second couldn't be contained due to this. It released a shockwave of harmful energy that hurt anyone like electricity.

"AGH!" Gamebang said as he was caught by my shockwave. He touched the sides of his stomach, burn marks, he felt and I saw. "Collei, whatever you're possessed by, it's feeding you false information! Do you hear yourself when you say this is protecting me? If you want to save me, then bring me back to Earth!"

"NO!" I screamed. I sent another shockwave, and Gamebang almost lost his balance.

Beelzebub made many grunts and sounds of struggle, while Azazel was silent as calm water. Beelzebub used both of his hands to wield his sword, Azazel only uses one. Beelzebub's swings are aggressive as fire, but Azazel's skills are swift and smooth as wind. And yet, Beelzebub kept fighting. He kept fighting for the balance of the universe. For Heaven and Hell to exist. Revenge for his father, and the manipulation Azazel has done to him and many others.

Beelzebub fought with every bit of strength he had. "WHY!" The swords clashed. "WON'T!" He looked at the Fallen Angel. "YOU!" He attacked with all his might. "DIE!" Beelzebub swung his sword at Azazel's, and as their steel made contact, Beelzebub's sword was broken in half.

The shattered pieces fell to the floor, the sounds of iron echoing. Beelzebub looked at his damaged sword, now half the size of his enemy's, the size of a dagger even.

And yet, he plunged forward to attack. Beelzebub wouldn't give up until his end. He would keep fighting, even if the pointy end of Azazel's steel would always be so close to hitting his face, even if his broken sword gave him a disadvantage. For the fate of every living creature depends on Beelzebub, but most importantly to him, his father. What he would do to reverse Azazel's manipulation, and see his father smile for the first time.

"AGH!" Beelzebub screamed with each blow he took or made. "AGH!" He could feel the weight of his own sword. "AAAGGH!" He is fighting with everything he's got. "RAAHH!!" And even with every fucking bit of effort... "EEAAHH!!" Azazel's emotionless face never changed.

He kept swinging and hitting, getting more and more tired each second. He was showering in sweat.

Beelzebub made one last hard swing to Azazel's steel. Once the blades hit, Beelzebub's grip disappeared from his hands. The broken sword dropped to the icy floor. Beelzebub's hands, bleeding and numb. No weapon, nothing.

And yet, in one desperate attempt, he charged for Azazel with his bloody fists.

It didn't take any effort for Azazel to grab and hold him. He looked into the eyes of Lucifer's son, and drew his steel into his stomach.

Azazel's hand, covered in blood. He let go of Beelzebub, who fell to the ground. He held his wound, doing everything he can in his weakened state. Azazel looked at something pitiful on the floor, and felt nothing for this creature that was begging the universe for mercy.

Eventually, Beelzebub's eyes went cold, and his body was unmoving.

Azazel looked at the corpse. But for safe measures, he drew his sword out again and plunged the head of Beelzebub multiple times, until you wouldn't recognize who this dead man was. All you'd see in its head was a bloody mushy mess. Azazel's head can consider this safety protocol, but his heart screams sadistic.

"Alright, that's over with." Azazel looked at us. "Come on, guys. Let's head into Purgatory."

Gamebang tried to resist, but he was no match for Azazel's arms. He took us back into his grasp, and we went to the hole under the ice, where the entrance to the Purgatorio lies. And without hesitation, Azazel jumped into it, and took us along.

And in the distance, the Wildfire saw no end to its roars.

...

Gamebang POV

I have no idea what's happening with Collei, but I ain't liking it so far. Plus, this Azazel guy is holding me too tight. My fucking stomach hurtsssss.

But it has been done. Cersei has accomplished her mission of lighting the Wildfire. It is only a matter of time before she goes into Purgatorio to enter Heaven.

But by the conversation Azazel and Bub had earlier, Light Yagami betrayed Cersei? If so, then the battle between God and the Devil isn't the only thing we should be worried about. The fight between the Yagami and Lannister clans is coming. Well, I assume Light has followers of his own. It'd be stupid if he didn't.

From what I can tell, there's no Wildfire anywhere in Purgatory. Thank fuck. But Azazel still desires its destruction. So from what I am gathering... He wants to use Collei's newfound powers to destroy the place. Is she really that powerful? What is she?

Heaven and Hell are both being burned by Wildfire. The most important members of each realm are all in Purgatory, the ones left in Heaven and Hell have probably been overthrown by the revolutionaries, just like Beelzebub. If I'm not mistaken, Inferno and Paradiso are being controlled by mortals.

Collei... That seal on her neck, it's making her indulge in negative and irrational thoughts. It seeks to destroy, disguised as her genuine desires and twisting them. I need to get through to her. I need to speak with her. I need to convince her that this isn't her. Not only will that save her, but also Purgatory. However, to save Heaven and Hell? I have no idea at this point. What can we even do?

"We're here." Azazel said.

We stood upon a ground full of tall grass, the first I've seen in like the entire 20 hours I've been in the afterlife. Actually, we're not alone. Turns out, the entire Hell and Heaven armies are here in the lowest part of Purgatory, called Ante Purgatory. Lucifer and God are supposedly up at the peak of the mountain. I have no idea what they're doing. The armies are not here because of Purgatory rules, they're here because it's the only place they can stay while God and Lucifer talk up there. Usually, people in Ante Purgatory are people who weren't Christian enough and they have to wait an entire lifetime before actually getting to climb the mountain of redemption.

What's pretty funny is that some of the people in the Hell armies are going out of line and climbing the mountain just so they can go to Heaven.

Wait, I'm dead, so technically I have to take this thing too.

Azazel moved us closer to the entrance of this mountain's climbing start point. It is guarded by an Angel of Peace, who is having quite the busy day as there's suddenly millions trying to climb the mountain.

"Excuse me." Azazel called to the Angel of Peace. "We would like to traverse the mountain."

"Yeah, I've heard that alot in the past 30 minutes." They said. "To be honest, sitting around here for a couple billion years without anyone entering this place because Lucifer blocked the entrance, I never thought I'd actually do my job for once." The Angel then noticed my presence. "Hey, you're the only dead person in your group."

"Yeah..." I responded.

"Lemme see what sins you'll be doing some cleaning of." The Angel took my hand and looked into my soul, searching for my sins.

And I already know what they are. The cheating. The lust. The hearts I've broken. The people I've hurt. Venti, Aqua, Ciarda... Myself...

I'm ready to be cleaned.

"I've looked into your sins, fine sir." The Angel told me.

"I know... I am a lustful man. I've cheated on many, and left them heartbroken. Like toys, I have used them-"

"What? No." The Angel said. "You already paid that debt when you went on your whole 1 year self improvement journey in prison, plus the 206 pages of character development when your daughter did some bad stuff. You're already forgiven there." The Angel said all of this casually, as if it was common knowledge.

"...What?"

"You're already paid your debt for those things when you were still living, Gamebang. Anyway, get ready, you still gotta take the Purgatory trials."

"Then... Then why was I sent to Hell? Why do I still need to take the trial? What sins am I paying for!?"

The Angel bit his lip, as if I had done something unspeakable.

"You did lewd acts with other men..." The Angel spat like venom.

"...WHAT."

"That's a big no no, man."

"WHA- SO I WAS IN HELL FOR BEING GAY!?"

"Yup."

I can't fucking believe it.

"Don't worry man." The Angel said. "Since we're kinda overflowing in the amount of travelers in this realm, and you don't have many sins for cleaning to begin with other than homosexuality, you can just say sorry right here right now and you'll be at the top of the mountain."

... So it was never the cheating... Oh thank God... That means redemption arc actually meant something... I am a better person. I did it, Alizeh. I finally did- wait hold on I'm not even gay, I'm bisexual. Doesn't that count for like I get half for uh I don't know.

But if I apologize now, they'll let me into the summit, and I'll be cleansed...doing gay stuff? I...don't see how thats a bad thing. Do I apologize? I mean, Heaven seems really cozy.

... Do I?

"So?" The Angel asked.

"... No." I said.

"What was that?"

"I'm not gonna apologize for doing gay shit."

"Huh?" Collei said.

"Cover your ears, Collei, I'm about to say some heinous shit."

She did as I asked and I stood strong in front of the Angel, determined to get my point across.

"Listen to me, Angel of Peace, I am not going to be sorry for doing something I loved, which was suck dick! It tastes good and the stuff that comes out is also a nice little dessert! If railing your homies is wrong, then I don't want to be right!"

I just realized, if they are only persecuting me for the gay stuff, then they must have also forgiven the dog stuff. Holy fuck. Anyway.

"How can you not consider licking the sweat off of your homies large biceps a good thing? I ask of you this, I deny the notion that being railed by a man is a sin! If anything, it's a blessing provided by God!"

The Angel was confused. "Uh-"

"I believe I speak for all my fellow LGBTQ members in the Hell Army when I say licking your homie's toe juice isn't a bad thing!"

When I said that, alot of people in the Hell Army started noticing my speech. Some were weirded out, but many were interested. I looked at them all.

"Fellas, is it wrong to be thrust by your friend's girly cock!?"

"NO!" Many of the Army replied.

"Is it wrong to consume the phlegm of any sick femboy that crosses the street!?"

"NO!!" They replied, louder.

"IS IT WRONG FOR TWO FEMBOYS TO FUCK YOUR EYES!? IS IT WRONG TO GO TO PRISON AND BE FUCKED BY SEVEN MEN IN EVERY HOLE!?"

"NOOOO!!!!"

"FELLAS AND GALS AND NON-BINARY PALS, WE WILL NOT STAND BY IN THIS GRAVE INJUSTICE! WHAT DO THE DIVINE KNOW OF OUR ETHICS? NOTHING! ONLY US! AND THAT IS WHY SHOVING A CRUCIFIX UP YOUR OWN ASS IS NOT WRONG!"

"YEEESSSS!!!!"

"BROTHERS AND SISTERS AND NON-BINARY PARTNERS, WE SHALL FIGHT AGAINST THIS INJUSTICE! I WISH TO LIVE IN A REALM WHERE YOU WILL NOT BE PUNISHED FOR FINGERING ANOTHER MAN THROUGH THE PP HOLE!"

"WOOOO!!!" The army cheered.

"Can I uncover my ears?-"

"Not now, Collei, I'm still not done with my speech." I clear my throat. "COME WITH ME AND FIGHT FOR THE RIGHT TO SUCK DICK!"

"YEEAAAAHHHHH!!!!"

And just like that, I got the support of the LGBTQ community to fight behind me.

"So..." I turned back to the Angel. "Are you ready to fight us?"

"..." The Angel wasn't having it. "I don't get paid enough for this shit. Just go up there, I don't give a fuck."

"Wha-"

He pointed at me and my body started glowing and floating. "Woah."

"Congratulations you're going to the top or some shit. Just leave me be, man."

"Wait- I need to take Collei with me- AAAAAHHH!!!" He flung me high in the air, and I saw the entire mountain right before me. The 7 Terraces of Purgatory, and the summit... The Earthly Paradise, or more commonly known as The Garden of Eden.

And thus, I landed on that very Garden, in its smooth perfect grass, under its beautiful blue sky, beneath clouds that sooth your eyes, and plants that radiate scent that calms your soul, and the air that comforts you.

It was...beautiful.

Oh and uh, it took away my clothes, everyone here is naked. But everyone including me don't really care, or notice to be exact. And my mind is blissful, curious about this place, I have been sent to a simple state of mind, like Adam and Eve before the apple. A childish innocent mind, a mind that can do no wrong. For this was it, I have been cleansed of the gay stuff.

I walk through the bushes and the juicy fruits, I see people simply relaxing (while naked.) under this beautiful place. I notice an apple that looked shiny. I rip it off from its plant and bite into it. It's unlike anything I've ever tasted before. Venti would've loved it more than wine.

This is perfect...

Ah yes, of course, I'm not entirely clean yet, I gotta head into River Lethe for some swimming and drink the water of River Eunoë. Both are practices of fully cleansing the soul and being prepared to enter Heaven.

I arrive at River Lethe. The water is blue as a perfect sky, and clean as the soul of one who finished swimming in it. My feet enter the water, it's temperature is perfect, neither warm, hot, nor cold, simply the perfect balance. My entire body enters and reaches up to my stomach. I stretch out my arms and fall into the water, submerging my entire body. I am at peace in this moment. I am not drowning nor am I searching or even needing of oxygen, I am simply here. My eyes closed, my body free from weight and simply floating wherever the water wants me to go, light as a feather, free as a dove.

And then, my head bumps into something, or someone. I open my eyes and look to what bumped me and I am immediately struck with joy.

"KAZUMA!" The water distorted my speech a little, but it was enough for him to notice.

"Holy crap, Gamebang!" He responded.

"Bro you're here too!?" I said.

"Yeah man, had to walk the mountain while I had a chance. Heaven is Heaven!"

"What was it like? I didn't need to do it, so."

"Pretty easy for the most part. You're faced with inconveniences most of the time when climbing. Some of it isn't even that bad."

"Well, do you feel cleansed of sin?"

"I mean, I feel great if that's something. You?"

"Yeah, I feel great."

"Well, you ready to head off into Heaven?" Kazuma asked me.

"Well... Not really."

"Whaaat. Come on, man, it's Heaven!"

"Someone I care about is at the bottom, so I have to wait for her."

"Oh I see, Beatrice. Well, I guess I'll stay with you for a bit longer, Gamebang." He laid down and started floating in the water.

"How's Cersei and her whole stuff?" I asked. "Hell's been doing some exploding lately."

"Oh shit they actually did it? Well, if they follow the plan accordingly, they'll be here in Purgatory any minute now."

"Pfft, I doubt Cersei Lannister can even cross this mountain to be cleansed." As I said that, I remembered Light Yagami, the man who fooled this place. Yikes, maybe there's a chance.

"Oh yeah!" Kazuma spoke. "I've got something to show you." He arose from the river.

"Hm?" I stood up and followed him into the trees.

We walked in this small forest for quite some time. I was mostly admiring the leaves and how perfectly shaped they are, and how pleasant the wood smells.

But as we went out of the forest, we stumbled upon a sight that made me go.

"Oh for fucks sake."

There laid a table full of exquisite meals. Two chairs with people sitting on them. One is constantly talking, and the other is just very grumpy.

So this is where Lucifer was, and that grumpy teenage girl I assume is God. He's just trying to act all upbeat and happy and romantic, and she's just not having it and looks sick of his shit, while eating the chicken Lucifer's servants cooked for them.

This doesn't look like it's going well.

...

Collei POV

Oh god damn it I just got him back now I gotta go up there.

"Hey, Angel, fly me up there too." I said.

"Sorry, I don't think you're dead, you're just here. Only dead people get that privilege."

"Then what do you expect me to do!?"

"Uh, climb the mountain?"

"..." I looked at the Angel menacingly. "Fuck you." I turned back to Azazel. "Azy, fly me up there or I won't do genocide this place."

"Look, Collei." Azazel spoke. "Just climb the damn mountain, it won't hurt. I got some shit to do aka checking up on Cersei and Light. There's alot of factors I need to make sure of."

"Oh come on!" I was pissed at this point.

"Look, I'll be back. Just climb the damn thing." And thus, Azazel flew away into some place I don't know. I kicked a rock in frustration.

The rock landed on someone's feet. I knew who they were, and they looked injured and tired.

"Well, well, well." I went closer to them. "If it isn't Com Insydeme."

"Collei...?" He said in exhausted breaths. "What are you..."

I notice a bunch of new people entering Purgatory behind him. All of them holding snakes for some reason. "Who are they?" I asked Com.

"I don't know, I don't care." Com replied before wiping away his sweat.

"Seems like they're pretty important, especially that golden haired lady."

"Look, Collei, are you going up the mountain?"

"Yeah?"

He looked at me with a desperate hope, like a dog begging to be adopted by a stranger. "Take me with you."

We stared at each other for an uncomfortable amount of time.

"Okay." I replied. "Come on, we ain't got all day, I gotta get my tutor."

"O-Okay..."

And there, we started moving up the mountain. We left Ante Purgatory and made it to the 1st Terrace, Pride.

Here, people who were prideful move up the mountain with giant rocks attached to their back. Funnily enough, the big strong guys have no problem with this. See what I mean by an American Ninja Warrior Course isn't a good way to be a good person?

I look behind me to Com and see that a giant rock also appeared on his back and now he's carrying it.

Another weird thing is that his forehead was bleeding, scarred with 7 P's.

"Dude, we're at the first terrace and you're already doing shit?" I said, annoyed.

"I was a prideful man..." Com said, while struggling to lift the rock, the blood from his forehead entering his eyes. "Arrogant and selfish. I acted like I was the best thing in the world when my music hit the charts, especially when I got to collaborate with Michael Jackson. When I lost all that fame and fortune, I did everything I could to regain it, and that's when I met..." He stopped talking.

"Met who."

"Nevermind... She's dead anyway."

I deeply sighed. "Alright, come on, I've run out of patience." I went behind him and assisted him in lifting the rock up. This resulted in 10 minutes of walking up, with my arms getting tired from helping this guy.

And then, we made it to the end of the 1st Terrace, where we were greeted by another Angel of Peace, different from the one before.

"Good job, Com Insydeme, son of Sukmai Pynis and Eetma fukeenteedies." The Angel said before I laughed my ass off. "You have crossed Pride." The Angel proceeded to do some magic shit and removed the first bloody P from his forehead. It's symbolic or whatever.

And thus, we entered the 2nd Terrace of Purgatory, Envy.

The people here wear long cloaks that hide their faces. But other than that, they just walk up apparently. Com also got a cloak instantly. What's the struggle here?

"Hey Com, do you- AAAAHHHHH!!!" I screamed as I saw Com's eyes were sewn shut, blood everywhere on his face. So that's why they need the cloaks...

"When I lost my fame..." Com explains his sad backstory again. "I was envious of other people's fortunes. I was jealous, even at Michael. 'I should have those privileges.' I thought. I looked on others with disgust because they had everything I wanted. I admit it."

"... Cool man, come on let's get the fuck out of here."

Since there was nothing burdening the people here other than being blind, I had to guide Com and make sure he didn't fall off the mountain.

We finished the 2nd Terrace a lot faster than the 1st. And thus, we met another Angel of Peace who said good job or something and erased the second P from Com's forehead.

Next up is the 3rd Terrace, Wrath, which was pretty underwhelming since it's just a bunch of gas and smoke blocking you from seeing where you're going. Not even a physical punishment for Com. Oh yeah, by the way, he got his eyes back.

"Fuckin hell." I said before using some of my powers to shoot some energy to the ground, simultaneously getting rid of a few smoke around us because of its strong wind and letting us temporarily see where we're going.

"I engaged in wrath for the sake of getting what I lost back." Another backstory by Com. "I... I worked with someone and went against the Atlantic government. I threatened the lives of many, and I have killed many. I regret working through violence with her."

"Yeah cool man."

What was funny though is that some people who were lost in the smoke fell off the mountain and screamed in terror. I thought it was hilarious.

Anyway, finished 3rd Terrace, Angel removes P, onto the 4th, aka Sloth.

These are the people who didn't love enough. I assume Com has a tragic backstory for this one too.

"Hey Com-" I looked back to see uh Com and a bunch of other people running in circles, making no progress in the climb.

"Collei help." He said. "I can't stop running in circles."

I seriously question how they're supposed to climb up when they're subjected to this, running around all day in the same spot.

I grab Com's hand and he's wild as fuck even as I restrain him. I had to hold him by the legs because they kept kicking me. I carried Com like a baby.

Anyway, finish 4th, remove P, time for the 5th, aka Greed.

"Hey Com- Oh for fucks sake."

Everyone in Greed are literally just paralyzed, laid down forever in eternity, never to stand or even sit. Seriously, how are they supposed to move up.

"Always gotta fuckin do this for you..." I carried Com like a baby again.

I had to step on a lot of people who were laying down just to get through this shitty place.

"I was always a greedy man..." Oh god damn it, Com. "I always wanted more and more. More money, more fame. It was all I lived for..."

"Yeah man cool whatever."

Remove P, Com's forehead looks alot better now despite the abnormal amounts of red. Now to the 6th, Gluttony.

"Collei..." He called to me. I looked at him and he seemed genuinely miserable. "Can... Can you get the apple above us?"

I looked up and saw a shit ton of apples. Turns out, the 6th is people starving for eternity while being unable to grab the apples from above. Wow, this is actually a good punishment.

"Come on, Com." I grabbed him and persuaded him to move forward.

"NO!" He screamed. "I'M HUNGRY!"

"Jesus fucking christ, come on!" I forced him to walk away from this place.

"NO!" He was yelling and whining. "I NEED THE APPLES!"

"If I had one, I'd feed you my dick just so you can shut the fuck up." I told Com right as we exited the 6th.
"There, you're not hungry anymore."

"Oh."

Angel removes P, only one P is remaining on Com's head. We continued our journey to the 7th and final Terrace, Lust.

"Have you ever committed lust, Com?" I asked.

"I don't think so." He answered.

"Then we have a safe journey up ahead."

Like I expected, everyone in Lust is literally on fire, but Com isn't. Good for him. Moving up this part is easy as cake.

"Hey, after this, you'll be at the Garden of Eden!" I told Com. "Your soul will finally be cleansed, like you always wanted."

"Yeah... Yeah!"

I gave him a good ol slap on the back. "Good job man."

As we moved closer and closer to the end of the 7th Terrace, Com was visibly happy, despite the people around us burning alive.

And there, we see the final Angel of Peace, next to a golden gate.

"Alright Com, this is it!" I continued to walk up, preparing myself to see Gamebang again.

But then I realize, Com wasn't walking along with me, he was below me and stayed still this entire time.

"Com?" I said. "What are you doing? You're almost there."

His face, I've never seen a man so terrified before. It's like he had seen true hell. And maybe he had, for I looked at what he was looking at, which was behind me.

A man sat on the rocks of the mountain, tending to his horse. He looked like the same age as Com. Dark skinned, orange jacket. A physique of a smooth criminal. He looked at Com like he was the most hideous thing in the world.

Com walked backwards as the man stood up.

"M-Michael..." Com said, shaking in fear.

No words were spoken, Michael immediately charged towards Com and punched him in the face. Com fell to the ground but swiftly got back up. Michael threw another punch, but Com blocked it with his arms.

"DAMN YOU!" Michael screamed in furious rage. He raised his legs and kicked Com's stomach. Com was sent backwards but retained his balance.

Michael ran towards him and began to make multiple punch attacks, but Com dodged or blocked them all. It seemed no matter what, Com wouldn't fight back, he would stay defending himself.

"YOU PIECE OF SHIT!" Michael's punches were increasingly getting stronger, even for Com. His arms meant for blocking Michael's attacks were turning red. "YOU DARE COME HERE!?"

Michael punched Com's head and sent him back to the ground. Blood spread everywhere, especially from the final P on his head.

"Michael... Please..." He begged. "I-"

Michael didn't listen, he kicked him, sending a shock of pain in Com's torso. "I-I am sorry..."

"Sorry, huh." Michael said as he loomed over Com like a mountain. "Yeah, say that to all the dead people who died in the Collapse of Time, which you helped started." Michael grabbed Com by the neck and held him in the air. "You should've died with Alizeh..."

Alizeh...?

Michael's hand tightened around Com's neck. Com was struggling to breathe.

"I-I came here..." Com spoke with all his strength. "I came here to redeem myself... To-"

"Cross Purgatory and have your soul cleansed?" Michael interrupted. "Go ahead, but remember this. God may forgive you, but I never will. I don't give a fuck of what the divine thinks of you, I will never forgive you for what you did. You're not gonna become a good person by completing this shitty roblox obby, and you never will."

Com began to cry. Tears washing away the blood on his face. He didn't wail, he silently wept.

"Go ahead and be redeemed in the eyes of the divine, but don't expect the people you've hurt to also forgive you. I don't have time for this shit, I have a war to prevent."

Michael let go of Com and dropped him to the ground.

"Fuck off. I never want to see you again."

"WAIT!" I called out for Michael. "What...what do you mean he should've died with...Alizeh." Saying her name was like swallowing venom.

Michael looked at me. "It means exactly what you think it does." And then, he left us.

I looked at Com, who didn't even have the strength to get back up anymore.

Alizeh... Don't tell me.

"Did you and Alizeh work together...?" I asked Com. He didn't answer, he just kept sobbing. But I had to know. I had to know if the man I've been helping all this time was once a partner to the woman who killed and raped my friends. I went up to him and took him by the hair, I looked at his pathetic weeping face. "TELL ME!"

"I..." He tried speaking. "I worked with Alizeh..."

... Words cannot describe how much I wanted to rip his head off and throw it off this mountain.

But I didn't. I let him go and he continued crying.

I sighed. "Fucked up world. Come on, Com. Let's just get up there." I continued to walk up, but I again noticed Com didn't follow me. "For fucks sake Com!"

I looked back to see Com standing at the edge of a cliff. His arms spread wide and his eyes closed. Shit.

I ran to him. Com's feet left the rock and he was nearly taken to gravity, but I grabbed him in the nick of time. Taking him made both of us fall to the floor, but at least not back to Ante Purgatory and dead.

As I held him in my arms, he started screaming. "LET ME GO! I CAN'T DO THIS ANYMORE!" He wailed.

"SHUT UP, DAMN IT!" I said. "WHAT THE HELL WERE YOU THINKING!?"

"WHY WON'T YOU LET ME DIE!?" He asked.

"I learned this from Alizeh." I answered. "Death is an escape from all your problems. I won't let you get away with the things you've done."

Eventually, his wildness decreased, and he was left a weak man who couldn't find the strength to even move. I let him go and stood back up. "Stand, Com." I told him. "You want real punishment for your crimes? Live. Now get the hell back up and be punished."

After a minute, he stood back up. His expression was emotionless.

We arrived at the final Angel of Peace, and they erased the final P from Com's forehead. We walked through the golden gate and made our way up to the Earthly Paradise, The Garden of Eden.

And it was beautiful. It was unlike anything I've ever seen before. For a moment, I felt like I was at peace.

Except Com, who was too depressed to even enjoy being here. Which was a punishment in itself. He worked so hard to get here, only to realize it might have been all for nothing. As long as the past existed, his sins won't be erased. He can be forgiven by the divine, but never by the people he hurt. They're still out there, and they matter more than God. That's the real punishment I've given him for working with Alizeh, to live. To think about his sins and let them swallow him whole.

"Come on, Com, let's find that river where you can be cleaned of sins or something." I took him by the hand and we walked. He stayed silent throughout this entire journey.

...

Gamebang POV

I'm just chilling in River Lethe while listening to Lucifer and God's conversation in the forest. Kinda surprised God is a teenage girl who plays genshin impact. Maybe that's why this world is fucked.

"You know... I'm glad I went up here." I told Kazuma.

"How so?" Kazuma asked as he ate an apple.

"I was in a pretty negative space back in Hell since I thought I was there for some specific things. Then I came here and figured out that it wasn't for those things at all. The universe already forgave me a while ago." I chuckled for a bit. "And why would I forgive myself for doing gay stuff?"

I think...everyone else is wrong. Maybe God and the Devil do believe in redemption, maybe they don't, but if you truly look within yourself, then you're the one who decides where you're supposed to go, and the divine will take you there.

"Man, now I understand why Light Yagami managed to get past Purgatorio." A familiar sweet voice said in the distance. "All you do is some weird challenges and boom! Soul cleansed. They focus on the physical rather than the mental."

"Collei!" I called out. I knew it was her. I exited the water and went to her.

"Oh! Gamebang! There you- OH MY FUCKING GOD." She covered her eyes. "WHY ARE YOU NAKED?"

"Purgatory rules, you gotta be naked when in the garden. Hey! Com's naked too! Look!" He looked pretty depressed though, and I suspect it's not because of his tiny dick. Hey wait a minute! "Wait... Com Insydeme?"

"Oh. Did he do something shitty to you too." Collei asked.

"Yeah, but I'd rather not shed blood on the grass of Eden." I answered. "Well, no point to beating a dead horse. Come on, Com, let's get you swimming."

He didn't move, so I had to come out of the water and drag his ass to the river. Collei was still covering her eyes. She still has her clothes on, so I suspect she's doing a Light Yagami and didn't really give a fuck about the climb. I mean, it's the only explanation.

"I was told God and the Devil would be here." Collei said. "Where."

"Behind those trees. We were listening to them the entire time like a podcast." Kazuma said.

"Thank you." She went on her merry way, but then hit her head on a tree since she was still covering her eyes.

Meanwhile, I was showering Com with the river water. "See? You're cleansed now! According to the divine, you are a good person now! Yay!" I gave him a slap on the back and expected a smile, but he just kept being depressed. "Alright dude, you're really bumming me out right now. This place is supposed to be happy fun times."

"How am I supposed to be happy...?" Com said. "And how am I a good person?"

"Well the divine says so. But not me lol."

"That's the problem..." Com sat down on the waters, his knees bundled up with his arms. "It doesn't matter what God thinks. Will the people I hurt forgive me? No. They matter more than God's forgiveness. And they're right to never forgive me. Who gives a shit about divine redemption when it is impossible to get mortal redemption, from the same group you're on." He grabbed a rock and threw on in the water. "God can say what they want, but I'm not a good person. And I never will. Climbing a mountain doesn't redeem you."

Hey, he sounds familiar to me a year ago. "I mean... You're right." I replied. "Look at me. I've hurt alot of people. Some have forgiven me, and some haven't and never will. But maybe that's okay." I sat close to him. "I focused on myself, and being better, and not only that, I made amends and suffered the consequences. I paid my debt, and went to getting better. And I did."

"But the people you've hurt..." Com said. "They're still out there, and you aren't bothered that you'll always be this villain in their eyes."

"I was a villain. But they're the victims, and the best thing you could do for them is to let them be and let them recover. It doesn't matter if they know you're sorry or not, that's their choice to make if they want to know that, don't force your apologies on them. Some people will never forgive you, and that's okay. That's the consequence you have to deal with. And the other best thing you could do for them, is to make sure

you never make more victims. So get up, Com, you want to be better? Then climb the mountain that's in your mind."

"But what if we don't deserve redemption...?"

"You can discuss ethics all you want, but all I know is that everyone deserves to live, consequence or reward."

I watched his facial expressions. He was clearly thinking about it. Wandering his thoughts to come to some kind of conclusion on what he should do next.

"Ah shit." I left the waters. "Kazuma, watch over Com for me. I just remembered Collei has a weird demon in her neck that's making her do bad stuff, so I gotta check on her real quick."

"You got it." Kazuma gave me a thumbs up. And then I left them.

I went inside the forest Lucifer and God were having their little date in.

There, I spotted Collei hiding behind some bushes, watching the two deities. I slowly walked up behind her to surprise her. "Hey."

"Ah- Jesus, Gamebang, don't sneak up on me like that."

"Oh come on, it was funny." I looked through the bushes to see what God and Lucifer were doing. Oh man, she still looks pissed.

...

"Are you done." God asked.

"Hold on, your majesty." Lucifer replied. "I'm almost done reading my love poem."

"Call me Haruhi for fucks sake." God- I mean Haruhi replied. I'm calling her that just in case she can read my thoughts. "You'll call Beelzebub the pronouns he wants to be called by, and yet you can't call me by my fucking name?"

Lucifer cleared his throat. "Roses are red, I have a crush-" Okay he just frickin ignored her and went on with his poem holy shit this man has no rizz.

"Uuuggghhhh." Haruhi was not having it. "This sucks ass."

"Well, do you wanna skip to the wedding?" Lucifer asked. "I know I want to."

"For the love of everything that is holy..." Haruhi was frustrated. "NO! Fuck you and fuck your gifts!" She took out the necklace Lucifer made for her and tore it apart as he watched in sadness.

"I just want to be with you..." Lucifer said on the verge of tears. "I ruled hell for you... I created bad to balance good for you... I tortured souls for you... I aimed to become a being that can be equal to you, just so I can be worthy of being with you, thats why I rule hell... I rebelled against your kingdom to be with you..."

"I never asked for you to do all of that shit!" Haruhi screamed. "You did all of that yourself! You made those choices! I didn't do shit! And Jesus man! I'm like your mom, you fucking creep."

"I love you..." Lucifer said.

"No, what you want is happiness, and you expect it from me because I made you very happy once. You are the living embodiment of the male loneliness. You're desperate for me without realizing you don't fucking need me!"

"But I do..."

"Bullshit!"

"I just want to-"

"Shut the fuck up. I don't give a fuck. You did this to yourself. You became the devil because you can't get fucking therapy. Shit, I made Purgatory for you fuckers, and you didn't even go there! You blocked the entrance for everyone else because you feel you did something wrong, the things you did for love. If you can't be redeemed, then no one can. You're the villain of this story, you denied trillions of their redemption because you can't see your own."

Damn, she may be right, but man she's mean. Lucifer looks like he's about to cry like a little bitch.

"I don't fucking know anymore..." Lucifer covered his face with his hands. "I just know that if I'm with you... I'll finally be happy-"

"FOR FUCKS SAKE STOP IGNORING MY WORDS!" Haruhi stood up from her chair and looked down upon him. "WAH WAH WAH, CRY LIKE A LITTLE BITCH. I DON'T GIVE A SHIT."

"W-What did I ever do you to you..." Lucifer asked. "I thought you loved all your children..."

Haruhi's eyes radiated with fury. She grabbed Lucifer by the collar of his suit and pulled him closer to his fuming face. "WHAT DID YOU DO!? WHAT THE FUCK DID YOU DO!? YOU KILLED KYON!!" Her hands were shaking with emotion. "YOU KILLED HIM BEFOFE I COULD SAY GOODBYE. I HATE YOU FOR CREATING HELL BECAUSE THATS WHERE HE ENDED UP INSTEAD OF MY THRONE! WHY!? WHY DID YOU KILL HIM!?"

"I-"

"WHY!?" She shook his body furiously. "WHY!!"

Lucifer spoke. "H-HE WAS GONNA GET IN THE WAY OF OUR RELATIONSHIP-"

"RELATIONSHIP!? OH MY AZATHOTH YOU FUCKING DELUSIONAL SHIT. YOU PATHETIC OBSESSED SWINE. I HATE YOU!" Haruhi punched him. Lucifer fell and broke the table and chairs, the food and drinks covering his entire body. Haruhi stood above him, beyond anger, beyond grief. "You've done sins I never thought existed. You blocked Purgatorio, you tortured souls even after they paid their debt, you killed angels, and you've hurt yourself. You are no victim, you are a lonely girl obsessed monster who makes your own problems everyone else's. You brutally raped some girl because she looked like me and gave birth to Beelzebub. And she wasn't the only one, as you have several children."

Wait what, holy shit. What the fuck, Lucifer.

Haruhi continued. "No number can tell the amount of fire and blood you've shed. But worst of all..." She bent down and took a broken piece of wine glass. She slowly sliced Lucifer's and carved P's in every corner. "You killed the one I love..."

In pure madness, Lucifer was laughing. Laughing from the fact he killed Kyon, but also he was being hurt physically by the one he loves, and he liked it, he loved it. Give him more attention, he thought, just keep your eyes on him. He was too far gone, beyond obsession, he was insane.

"You killed Kyon... You killed Kyon..." Her carving of P's went beyond his face and went to his neck. "All I've ever wanted was to be human. To live among those beautiful and complex creatures. And when I was, Kyon was the first person to make me experience mortal love. I've dealt with the pains of being a human. But Kyon was there to help me, even after he knew what I was when I didn't. He made me laugh, he made me smile. I loved him more than the universe. I remember a time when I was genuinely suicidal

because of how the world was, but he saved me. Damn it, he saved me. He made the world less boring, he gave it color. And all he did was tell me I looked pretty with a ponytail on, and I fucking wore a ponytail the day after he said that." She laughed while the tears flowed out of her eyes.

"Because of him, I achieved my dream of being human. I loved like a human and I loved him. He lifted me up from sorrow and made me feel less shitty. He was my light, the person I loved." Haruhi was trembling. "And you killed him... You killed him, you killed him, you killed him..."

"H-he was going to steal you from me..." Lucifer said before laughing.

"I LOVED KYON MORE THAN ANYTHING! HE WAS GOOD, HE WAS KIND, HE DID NO WRONG OTHER THAN... OTHER THAN BE WITH ME. HE WAS LOVING, HE WAS CARING, HE CARED AND YOU KILLED HIM!!!"

She let go of him and the broken glass piece and stood up once more.

"You can cross this mountain a million times, you can confess your sins to church all you want, you can eat as many crackers, you can be baptized, sacrifice goats or your son to me, build a boat for me, you can do anything and I wouldn't forgive you. Maybe I would've before I was a human, but not anymore. You can work on yourself and maybe forgive yourself, but not me. Never me. Because of you, I will never be happy again. Because of you, I can never be human again. Because of you, I realized that I only hurt others because I am God. Because of you, I've lost everything. I have nothing left but the human emotion of revenge in my heart. I hate you. I hate you. I hate you. I want to make you experience pain that doesn't exist. I want to rip your fucking head off and feed it to your own hounds. I want to see your son shocked and in horror as I shower in your blood. Then, I will kill them too. And then, at long last, I will kill myself. I won't meet Kyon, because there's nothing beyond being erased, but at least I will be at peace, for I will feel nothing. No pain, no happiness, no grief, no love. I'm going to shoot myself in the mouth with a gun, like a human would. But I want to be covered in your organs as I do it."

Her hands radiated divine energy, aimed at Lucifer's maniacal laughing face. She was going to kill him.

"God has answered your prayers. She answers with a miracle, your blood on her hands."

Boom. She shot her kill. Her attack glowed so bright that for a moment everything in my vision was white. I knew it, Lucifer must be burnt to ashes by now.

But I was wrong. Once my vision was restored, I saw him blocking it with his own flame. He was laughing too.

"I'm not going to die until I get what I want!!!" He declared.

"I know what you want." Haruhi said. "If you want to rape me, then try as you like. I'll cut it off and feed it to your kids."

Lucifer moved forward and made her walk backwards. And thus began their battle.

They were constantly shooting energy at each other, blocking it or returning it. They were battling at an intense speed, hard for me to keep up and see. But everytime Lucifer was hit by her attacks, he'd moan like it was the most orgasmic feeling in the world. Whenever Haruhi herself was hit, she'd only get more furious while drinking her own blood. The more they shot attacks at each other, the more they were hitting other things as well. Me and Collei had to dodge many of these attacks to not get killed. I saw what it could do, turn you into ashes, as it had done to a tree right next to me. At least, that's what Haruhi's attacks did.

Then, Lucifer tried to punch Haruhi, but she caught his fist. The impact of the attack shook the mountain, me and Collei fell to the ground. They proceeded to only do hand to hand combat. Each hit made the

realm shake. It was like a devastating earthquake, and the structures of rock were broken, trees fell everywhere, and we held on for dear life.

"Argh!" Lucifer held out his hand to the air, and lightning came to him from above.

It seemed like Haruhi knew what he was doing, and thus did the same. Her lightning was bigger in thickness, though, and brighter.

And when the lightning disappeared, so did they.

Until I looked up.

Lucifer was in his three-headed devil beast form. This time, he was the size of the entire mountain. He roared like a true embodiment of evil.

Haruhi emerged in her God form, her true form. The figure of a woman glowing pure golden light. She flew with wings. She was just as large as Lucifer.

And then, the two beasts fought in the sky. Shaking the realm and cracking it like ice. Attacks only deities use. Damage that can never be reversed. The afterlife was at risk of destruction.

"It's my time..." Collei said menacingly as she activated her abilities.

"Wait, Collei, what are you-"

"I'm going to set the entirety of Purgatory on fire with my powers."

In her hand she held purple flame.

"God damn it." I said.

Collei ran away from swiftly to initiate her move.

"WAIT!" I screamed as I ran after her.

She ran all the way to the center of the garden. Her entire body glowed purple, her aura was pure negativity. She raised her hand to slam it to the ground, resulting in her deal with Azazel fulfilled, but I charged at her and tackled her before she could do all of that. She struggled whilst I endured the pain of the energy she was emitting. She pushed me off and tried to attempt to do her thing again, but I tackled her again. I wasn't going to let her do anything she would regret.

"COLLEI!" I yelled as she struggled in my arms. "STOP THIS! THE ARCHON RESIDUE IS CURSING YOUR MIND!"

"LET ME GO!" She screamed like a demon. "I'M DOING THIS TO PROTECT YOU! LET ME BURN THEM ALL!"

She pushed me away again and escaped from my grasp. She ran back to where she needed to be and raised her hands once more.

I swooped in and took hold of her hand before it could initiate its destruction. She tried to make me let go, but I was physically stronger than her. She groaned frustration.

But then, something I never expected, she headbutted me and sent me to the ground. It hurt like hell, she'd used all of her strength to hurt me. I touched my nose, and I saw red on my fingers. I looked up at her, she didn't even make an emotion. She would never do this.

She attempted her move again, but I tackled her again. This time, I made sure she wouldn't escape from me. And this time, I moved her away from the center of the garden. But where could I take her? She

struggled and struggled and kept giving pain to my arms and torso as I held her tight and carried her. She was resisting hard, and the Archon Residue emitting would sometimes burn my skin. I'd scream whenever that happened.

And then, while we were in this power struggle, I bumped into a large rock and stumbled. We both fell.

But then I looked up, and saw roots of plant surrounding a bright yellow portal. And I read what was inscribed at the top of it.

"Glory be to God, for everything here operates under her will."

There was no mistaking it. This was the Gate to Heaven.

Collei got up and tried to run back to the center, but I tackled her again and charged forward while holding her, aiming for the entrance before me.

We both entered the portal.

Chapter 7: The Experiment.

Yoimiya POV

This is the emergency broadcast system announcing the commencement of the Ritou Experiment. Weapons of class 4 and lower have been authorized for use during the experiment. All other weapons have been restricted. Government officials of ranking 10 have been granted immunity from the experiment and shall not be harmed. Commencing at the siren, any and all crime, including murder, will be legal for 12 continuous hours. Police, fire, and emergency medical services will be unavailable until tomorrow 7AM, when the experiment concludes. Glory to the Shogun and her everlasting reign, the NFI wishes all of you best.

Hour 1.

I'm joined by Kazuha as we head into the party at the docks. Everyone is wearing costumes and dancing to the very vulgar music. I think the song is called uh Dubious Activities by PolandBall?

It has been a while since the experiment began. So far, people are just partying and mildly robbing and being naked out in public and drugs and other stuff. People are just doing illegal things they've always wanted to do. I mean, who hasn't wanted to do something like vandalism?

"Hehe, we're so cool." I said as I spray painted the walls of the Outlander Affairs Agency.

"If you want to be a criminal, then draw something more vulgar next time." Kazuha told me. "No one is expecting a criminal of someone who drew a cute cat."

"Oh come on! What about you! You're just drawing a giant leaf!" I pointed out.

"I'm not exactly trying to build a reputation for this single night, unlike you." Kazuha stated. "You're trying to do cool illegal things, I just want this to be over with and get the 20k Mora."

"Geez, have a little fun, man. We're heading back to the party anyway after this." I continued drawing my cat.

"I don't do illicit drugs nor do I like being naked out in public." Kazuha said.

"It doesn't have to be that!" I responded. "What are some crimes you always wanted to do?"

"I fight for what's right. That's why I wield my sword." Kazuha said as he finished drawing his leaf. "It'll feel wrong to do anything bad."

"Well, no doubt some perverts will try to do some things tonight while they still can." I was suggesting something to Kazuha. "It's not like assault is banned either."

"Hm, you're right..."

"How about you go be a hero tonight? All kinds of punishment will be allowed."

He chuckled. "What about your criminal desires?"

"Already working on them!" I immediately took out a giant firework I had been saving for tonight and aimed it at the top of the Outlanders Affairs Agency. I aimed it like a gun and lit the string on fire.

BOOM! It shot like a bullet and crashed into the top floor. Afterwards, fireworks were everywhere.

"Don't worry, no one's in there. But no doubt, their stuff is gone." I laughed.

"So you wanna commit destruction of government property." Kazuha said.

After I finished my bunny and Kazuha finished his stupid leaf, we returned to the party. Everything was the same, mostly dancing, which I'm not sure is illegal. Kazuha is dancing though.

In the distance, we see someone running away from the area, carrying a bag of Mora they stole while maniacally laughing. On my left, people are making illicit drugs out in the open and selling it to everyone while making sure no one steals it. On my right, a strip club in the middle of the streets, all types of activities there.

"Hey, you heard of the Danger?" A girl was talking to another girl while dancing to the music.

"Who's that?" She asked.

"The Danger is apparently some kind of murderer going around Ritou, killing people randomly. He wears a scary mask and-"

"If you think that rumor is something, then let me tell you about Attack and Queen."

"Attack and Queen?"

"Like Danger, they roam the streets of Ritou, but instead of murder, they have passionate gay sex with whoever they encounter."

"So, serial rapists?"

"Oh, not even close. Rumors say that once you enter within 6ft of their range, you will immediately consent and beg on your knees. Try as you might to deny their power, but you will submit and you will be a changed person, well, in terms of orientation."

"Sounds a little too crazy."

"Wanna know what's crazier? The people they have sex with disappeared. No one knows where they are."

Danger... Attack and Queen... Interesting.

"Hey, Yoimiya." Kazuha came back to me, holding his phone. "I just pirated a game. Holy shit I'm so criminal."

"Uh..." Well, I do that all the time. "What did you download?"

"Minecraft!" Kazuha's eyes sparkled.

"Well, I heard there's a serial killer roaming the streets." I informed Kazuha of Danger. "Wanna catch them?"

"Hold on, I'm trying to build my house."

I wasn't having it. I took his arm and dragged his ass to adventure. I wanna have a fun night.

We ended up in a pretty desolate area, almost devoid of people, dark and creepy. The perfect place for a killer to show up! We were hiding on the top of a roof and watching below for activity.

"We're watching a murderer!" I excitedly told Kazuha.

"Why are you excited. The guy is killing people." Kazuha said.

"O-Oh right. Yeah, death is horrible."

He continued to play minecraft while I waited for something to happen in this street. The stores here either look robbed or very secured. There's a few people chilling in the alleyways, doing heroin or trying out their weapons infused with delusions.

Oh! Activity! I see two very suspicious people walking in the street, male and female. They're holding...tissues? They're wearing a mask. The male's mask has the colors of the flag for gay men. The female's is for lesbians.

They see one of the people using a delusion weapon in the alleyway. Suddenly, the man dropped the weapon and started barking like a dog. He was then curled up against the wall, as if he was struggling to contain something. Or...to accept something. The male with the mask came closer as the female left to go to a woman she saw in another alleyway, just across the street. The woman started struggling the same as the man once the female with the mask approached her. Both of them didn't even look like they were being hurt, they were blushing, their entire face was red.

In sync, the two masked people knelt and kissed their prey passionately.

In less than a second, clothes were off. The masked male started fucking the man like an animal. The masked female began to drink from the woman's vagina. The masked made no sound, while their newfound toys were having the time of their life.

The man being fucked started screaming. "PLEASE! FUCK ME! I NO LONGER LIKE WOMEN! I AM GAY! I LOVE DICK!"

The woman being eaten out was yelling out to the night. "WOMEN WERE BETTER AFTERALL! I LOVE BREASTS! I HATE DICK NOW! PLEASE! MORE! MORE!"

What...is happening?

Once their prey cummed all over the walls, they passed out. The masked duo stood up and hid their private parts back into their suits, as if business just happened. They took their toys and carried them away from the street.

Oh my god...

Hour 2

"It's Attack and Queen..."

"Who and who now?" Kazuha asked. "I just got done building my farm. What happened."

Attack and Queen were walking away, yet they were walking dangerously close to where we were. 6ft...

"KAZUHA! GET BACK!" I ran away from the perimeter while making sure I didn't fall from the roof. But I quickly notice that Kazuha wasn't beside me.

I look behind and see him blushing as he stared at the masked man. He stood up, and was ready to fall to the ground.

"NO!" I ran back to him, making sure he wasn't going to go to them. I held him and I wasn't gonna let go anytime soon. "RESIST IT!"

The duo had left from the area far enough for me to not be affected. But Kazuha...

"I... What's this feeling...?" Kazuha said in a curious voice I've never heard from him. "I... I want to... I need..."

"KAZUHA! SNAP OUT OF IT!"

This was a mistake. I didn't know it was truly possible. I didn't believe. I never imagined one can change sexualities by entering the distance of a person.

"KAZUHA! LOOK!" I took off my shirt and exposed my breasts to him. "FOCUS!"

"I..." Kazuha looked disgusted. "I d-don't..."

"Come on, man, this shit is humiliating already. At least like it." I told him.

"Maybe I would've a moment ago... But now? I just..."

"KAZUHA, FOCUS DAMN YOU!" I started jiggling them.

Then, Kazuha vomitted off the roof out of pure disgust. It's useless... Even I can't keep him on the straight side.

But the sound of his vomiting and the splashing of the puke on the street was so loud that the masked duo stopped their tracks and heard it. They looked behind them and saw a Kazuha staring at the masked man, and my exposed boobs.

"WOOF!" Kazuha tried to run off the roof, but I stopped him. I tried to drag him and run away with me, but he was too strong for me to handle. And to my horror, I heard the footsteps of Attack and Queen.

Shit shit shit. If they enter our area, I'm going to... I can't let that happen!

"WOOF WOOF WOOF!" Kazuha used all of his strength to get away from me.

"KAZUHA! STOP!"

And then, the duo entered within 6ft of my location.

Suddenly, I felt dizzy. My vision was blurry. Everything was a muffled sight, except... HER. She was the only thing that was clear, and her revealing clothing shows cleavage of her...

NO! I CAN'T GIVE IN!

My dragging of Kazuha became weaker and weaker as I just kept staring at HER. She looked so...beautiful. Her golden hair shone in the dark night, and her tits radiated the aura of comfort. Suddenly, I felt my exposed boobs feel the need to be sucked by...HER.

I became so weak and horny that I just knelt to the ground. I still held Kazuha, but we weren't moving anywhere, and the duo just kept getting closer and closer...

I can't... I shouldn't!

My hands desperately went to Kazuha's bulge. I started stroking it, but then I felt the urge to vomit. I stopped immediately. And then I looked at my own breasts, and felt fascinated by them. Then, I felt myself wet.

NO! NO NO NO! I... I LOVE COCK! THIS IS HOW ITS MEANT TO BE! I LOVE DICK! I LOVE SUCKING DICK! AND- AND! MEN! YES! I LOVE... I LOVE ME- I LOVE... I...

The duo climbed the house and arrived at the roof where we were. They stood over us like...like mythical Gods.

No... I love men... I love... I...

I let go of Kazuha and curl up on the ground, struggling and in a mental battle in my mind. I am breathing heavily and my heart is pounding. I can't stop imagining it... What HER tits would look like... I can't stop thinking about it! But... I'M NOT GAY! I CAN'T BE! I- I- I CAN'T! THE LIQUID FROM INSIDE ME IS LEAKING OUT OF ME.

I CAN'T HELP BUT IMAGINE WHAT HER LIQUIDS WOULD TASTE LIKE. LIKE...LIKE SOMETHING TASTY AND CREAMY... AND- NO! NO NO NO! I CANNOT! NO NO NO! I AM NOT GAY! NO! NO! I-

"Shh..." The masked lady knelt down to my level and placed her hand on my lips. "I see your struggles... I sense your hesitation... It is okay." She took off her soft finger from my lips and it went down inside her clit. When it came back to my face, it was dripping wet with the very liquid I dreamed of tasting. It's right there, everything I ever wanted and more... "It's okay... You can let it go." She said in the most gentle and soothing voice I've heard.

I... I am...

I closed my eyes and I made the finger enter my mouth, I licked every trace of the liquid from it. It tasted majestic, so...glorious... I loved the taste...

I opened my eyes, which now formed hearts. I looked up at her beautiful mask.

"I... I want to see your boobies..." I asked her.

She smiled like an angel and...showed me what I wanted.

I... I am a fucking lesbian.

Hour 3

"YES! MORE MORE MORE!" Kazuha screamed as his ass was being pounded by the masked male crusader. "BREED ME! FILL ME WITH YOUR CHILDREN!" The masked man slapped Kazuha's ass until it was red with his handprint, and Kazuha enjoyed it more than drawing leaves. The slapping made echoes throughout the streets, both the hand and the pounding. For the 5th time, the masked man nudded inside Kazuha. His entire body tensed up, and the masked man had no shortage of semen. In fact, the amount only increased each time. It was all leaking out of Kazuha's hole, for it has not the capacity to contain every bit of juice the masked man had.

Meanwhile... I was drinking out of the masked woman. My entire tongue was inside her, making sure it got every crevice and juice. Sometimes, it would go up my nose. I'd suck through my nose too hard and it'd actually leak out of my eyes. But as long as it was inside me, I was okay with it. I want to cry more of her. I want more of her. Her finger was inside my pussy. She had long sharp nails that scraped my insides like metal, but the pain, oh the pain, I wanted more, I wanted to smell my own blood from afar. Please, hurt me more. Hurt me until my entire ass is red with my own blood. And then, as I was sucking her, she cummed and squirted everything inside my mouth like a hose. I drank everything. I loved the taste. Her pleasure juice mixed with her piss. More... "I want more..." I begged her. "Please... I want more."

She took me head and made me suck on her luscious firm breasts. At this point, my pussy was so wet that one could assume it was peeing. I drank up her milk and it reminded me of my mother. Then she took my mouth away from her nipples and made me kiss her. We made out like it was the last day of the world. Her tongue battled with mine, and I was purposely losing.

Kazuha was eating the masked man's cock like it was a luxurious meal only for him. The masked man cummed again, and Kazuha's saliva was replaced with cum. His tongue treasured each inch of the man's cock. And when he would, he would eat the pubic hairs like noodles. He'd suck the entire thing just so his face can revel in the pubes. He moaned as if a chiropractor just cured a pain he had for years.

Me and the masked girl were scissoring, our pussies connected, exchanging liquids that were sometimes red. I couldn't believe it. My own tight little vagina was kissing hers. HER. And she was kissing me! Like I was her only true lover!

"I LOVE YOU!" I told her as I made out with her. I wanted her to marry me. I wanted to live the rest of my life with her. I wanted to have children with her even though it's not physically possible. I am so fucking gay. I love women so much. I love titties.

"NYAAAAAAA!!!" I screamed out into the starry night as I orgasmed. Our liquids spouting everywhere like the fireworks I make.

"NGUAAAAHHH!!!" Kazuha cummed as well. He was out of semen, and his ass was torn apart like broken leaf. The man blew his ass like the wind.

"Hoof..." The masked man spoke. "Surprised they could handle all of this dry."

"They lasted longer than the others." The masked woman responded. "Take them back to our hive."

Me and Kazuha were too weak to move, but we were going to go with them anyway. They carried us like children to a place we didn't know. But wherever it was, I just hope she's there by my side as I suck on her tits...

"They'll make fine additions to our own party." The masked man said. "Right, Historia?"

"Indeed, Eren." The masked woman responded. "The others will love them."

...

Kujou Sara POV

"How does it look so far." I asked Kamaji, who just left the maintenance office.

"A few robberies, vast amounts of drug use, possession of illegal material, 2 murders and a couple of assaults, and the rape is more minimal than I thought, I guess people still have dignity on that front." Kamaji drank some water. "I've taken pictures of the statistics. So far, it's proving that nothing will change once this is over. A little bit, but it won't change our national crisis."

"God bless the NFI." I said sarcastically. "Once this shitshow is over, we can gang up on the NFI and take back our country."

"Mhm." Kamaji handed me a bottle of water. I took it.

And for a while, we just sat down and did nothing but wait for new things to take a picture of.

Hour 4

"Hey guys." Ayaka walked by us. She snapped her fingers 3 times. The signal for emergency, as taught by Kokomi. Me and Kamaji followed her into the bathrooms, where Ayato had disabled the security cameras. And for extra safety, we were all in different stalls. And even then, we spoke pretty quietly. We had to make this quick.

"Shinsuke has betrayed the revolution." Ayaka whispered. "He is heading to Holden Hiscok himself to reveal our activities."

Shinsuke was the former clan leader of the Hiiragi Clan, and has recently taken over again ever since Chisato's murder. We placed a bunch of safety measures around him since he was imprisoned for working with the Fatui. One of the members of the clan informed him about the revolution, seeing it necessary to have him be involved and be the representative for their clan in the revolution, as no other member had the same status.

We were all hesitant and against this. He was against the Shogun. But Kokomi insisted that he prove himself to be faithful to the rightful ruler of Inazuma, the Electro Archon. What is it with Hydro people always believing in redemption? And thus, he worked with us.

And it seemed this has backfired.

"If we kill him, what will the Hiiragi Clan think?" Kamaji asked. "They not of his actions, right? They'll think it was a declaration of war. The Tri-Commission is supposed to be one united front."

"You're right. We cannot kill him." Ayaka responded. "We just need him to stay in line..."

"Kidnap him and threaten him, is what you're saying?" I asked her.

"Whatever it takes."

"Where is his location?"

"Somewhere in Inazuma City. We don't know where, but we know he hasn't been in Tenshukaku for the whole 4 hours. He must be headed here."

"Who else knows about this?" Kamaji asked.

"Everyone except the Hiiragi Clan itself."

"Then I guess a threat truly is our safest option." I responded.

"A reminder that we aren't in Ritou." Ayaka stated. "Everything here in Inazuma City is still illegal. Try not to commit major crimes. It'll look strange if anywhere outside of Ritou occurs an illegal activity."

"Copied." Me and Kamaji said.

We left the bathroom. Although, we had to wait a minute before leaving once someone left, so I was left alone for a while here. But I did leave, and I see Kamaji looking at me.

I knew what that look meant. I nodded. He's leaving it to me to handle this issue, for a representative of Kujou must be at Tenshukaku at all times. Plus, it's less weird for a general like me to go scouting in the city than a diplomat like my brother.

I left Tenshukaku and roamed the streets of Inazuma City.

...

Yoimiya POV

Hour 5

I woke up to the sounds of plapping flesh and moans. I opened my eyes. I was laying down on a pretty comfortable bed. I turned sideways, and saw the whorehouse I was in.

Tons and tons of people having sex, but never with their opposite gender. Everyone was gay, and everyone was a monster in bed. Some of them were even red with blood from too much gay sex, I was worried for the STD's they'd inherit. And I couldn't help it, I got wet when I saw three women fingering one another while sucking each other's breast. And I looked at the men, and felt only disgust, like the penis was some sort of hideous creature. I knew what this meant, I have changed. Wonder what me from 2 hours ago would've thought. I used to be such a dick lover too... And that all changed in an instant when I saw...her.

Her... Queen, yes. Oh my god... Being intimate with her was like being in Heaven. Never in my life had I felt so much pleasure before. I'm thinking about it right now, and I'm only getting wetter.

"Sup." A familiar voice said to me. I looked up and saw Kazuha, completely naked and covered in cum.

"Oh, you're here too." I said.

"Yup. Looks like this is where Attack and Queen take their prey. It makes sense they disappeared from the outside world, who would want to leave?" Kazuha licked the cum off of his finger. "Go on, fuck anyone you want here. I know I will."

Kazuha left me and went to penetrate one man who was bending over, practically begging to be fucked. And then, another came and went inside Kazuha. Then another came inside that, and another. They formed a train of pleasure.

I stood up and walked into the sex area, and I admit I was pretty shy. So many beautiful women... How do I just casually ask them to have sex with me?

"NYA!" I felt a finger shoved up my pussy. Then I felt the presence of big titties on my back, accompanied with the sounds of heavy breathing. I guess I got my answer, you don't ask for permission, because you already got it.

I proceeded to have hot steamy sex with this woman, who had the biggest pair of bahongas I have ever seen. She fingered my asshole and my vagina at the same time. I played with her big boobs like they were pizza dough. And occasionally, we'd kiss, exchanging saliva and snot. I cummed and squirted all over her like a sprinkler, and she loved it. She then started to lick my breasts. I loved it so much that I became wet again. I started fingering her clit too. The sounds of her moaning turned me on more than anything. The sounds of a woman in pleasure is truly the greatest thing since fire.

I cummed again, and felt satisfied with my activity. The girl I was with passed out from the pleasure.

And yet, I still felt this sad emptiness in my heart. Maybe it needed to be filled up with more women? No. I knew what this feeling was. No matter how many women I finger, there is only one place in my pussy that is meant for one finger. It was her, Queen. I was in love. I can feel the greatest pleasures in the world with all of these other women, but my heart yearns for her only.

But can it be possible? Is the likelihood of me marrying such a beauty even more than zero? I haven't even seen her face, for she hides it within that mask. She must look like a female Jesus, and she can bless me with holy water whenever she wants, for I have sinned and am ready to be cleansed. Holy shit, her feet must smell amazing. Thinking about her, it makes me so wet! Fuck! I need to satisfy this pleasure by having sex with another woman!

And so I did.

Hour 6

"Man, this experiment is great." Kazuha said as he drank some water. We were both back in our beds to rest. Having sex is tiring. "We're doing all sorts of illegal sex stuff here, and no one is telling us no!"

"Yeah." I had to say, my vagina is fucking destroyed. I think it's actually leaking out red stuff.

"Oh hey, it's Attack and Queen."

I immediately looked to the direction they're in, through the speed of light. And there she was, without her mask.

Her face was adorable as a cat, yet striking in sexiness like a lioness. Her long hair, golden like herself. Her medium sized breasts look perfect to snack on, and I want them to choke me to death. Her ass was a different story, for it was big and bubbly, and I want it on my face. Her petite body is smaller than mine, and yet her presence dominates the entire room, and I want her to top me. Her hands would look beautiful with a ring from me. Her uncovered shoulders, those perfect thighs, those sparkling eyes and that beautiful smile.

Kazuha noticed my mouth drooling.

"I am going to ask her to marry me." I told him.

"Uh, what."

"Did you not hear?" I repeated. "I am going to ask her to marry me."

"You can't just ask that!" Kazuha stated. "They're way out of your league!"

"Oh what? Like you don't wanna marry Attack too?"

"Well, I want to, but even I know that's not possible!" Kazuha sighed. "It's all a fantasy, and you need to look at reality."

I stood up. "I say...never give up on dreams."

I proceeded to walk over to Queen. I was shy, but I needed to convey my feelings.

Queen was talking to Attack. "Our own personal whorehouse and 20k Mora? Best night ever."

"You know it." Attack slapped a man's ass, and the man automatically cummed. "Inazuma is the best."

"U-Uhm..." I stood before her and she noticed my presence. I felt like cumming when her eyes gazed upon me and my naked body. "H-Hi..."

"Oh hey, rooftop girl." She responded.

I'm changing name to that.

"I'm gonna go check on the generator and make sure this place doesn't black out." Attack said. "Take care of them, Historia."

Historia? Oh my god what a gorgeous name. I'd love to scream it everytime her soft delicate hands are inside me.

"So... Anything you want?" Historia asked me in the voice of an Angel.

"I want your babies- I mean your hand in marriage." I said almost immediately.

"Huh."

"Historia, you are the most beautiful woman I have ever seen in my 3 hour runtime of being a lesbian. You turned me gay, and I want you to turn me into yours..." I said with all my heart. I poured my whole soul into saying these words. If there is any embodiment in the universe that is made of no lies and only truth, it is my words to the woman I love.

"Well... That is flattering." She responded. "But I don't really have any interest in dating right now. Sorry, darling. Why not Hana or Himari over there? I'm sure you can find someone here."

She tapped me on my shoulder, and left me alone. I stood still as I felt my heart stabbed by a million bolts of electricity. I wanted to crawl to the floor and cry out to the Archons. The tears couldn't be stopped, and I cried the same way my pussy would've for her. I wanted to cry tears of ecstasy as she rubbed her hole against mine, but I cry tears of heartbreak now, and nothing can heal this pain.

I walk back to my bed and Kazuha.

"Women suck..." I said.

"Told you that it was impossible." Kazuha told me. "She's out of your league."

"Why do women always do this..."

"I don't know, ask yourself, you're literally one."

"I admit, another hoe got me finished. Broke my heart, oh no she didn't..."

"Are you singing Juice Wrld."

"All girls are the same. They're rotting my brain, love. Think I need a change. Before I go insane, love."

"Look, Yoimiya, just follow what she said! Look for the other women in this place, and there are tons!" He tried lifting my spirits. "There's plenty of fish in the sea."

"But... I wanted that fish..."

"Well now you're never smelling hers."

I proceeded to sob. Kazuha was rubbing my back to comfort me.

"You know, I never thought I'd be here, comforting you while we're both very naked but very unattracted to each other while being inside a house full of naked men and women who are constantly fucking each other of the same sex." Kazuha said.

"I'll never find love..." I said in a defeated voice.

"Oh come on, girl, don't give up that easy. Why don't you got have sex with another woman to drown your sorrows?"

"The only woman I want to have sex with is Historia..."

"We don't get a choice in other people's choices." Kazuha said.

I laid down and let my tears consume the pillow. Kazuha was still patting my back.

And then he stopped.

"AH!" "OH MY GOD!" "WHAT THE-" Everyone was screaming when the door made a loud BANG noise. I sat back up and saw what was happening.

There were people who barged in the room, with guns and swords. All of them were wearing masks. Quite hideous masks, if I am honest. One is covering his face with a creepy smiling face that's only black and white.

Everyone was running away to the other side of the room, clearly conscious that they were naked. They had nothing to cover themselves with but the pillows on the beds.

"Eren!" Historia called as Attack came back to the room.

"I heard something." Attack said. "What's going- what the fuck."

The masked gang pointed their guns at us. Everyone was screaming. I could see Attack and Queen visibly distressed.

"Okay, you're robbing us and it's currently your right to do so." Eren slowly walked up to them with his hands up, and uh a boner. "We have nothing to offer you, well, other than pleasure."

One of them shot their gun, the bullet landed beside Eren's foot. He flinched, but quickly calmed down.

"Okay, you guys don't want pleasure." Eren said. "That's fine. We have money, right guys?"

"Yeah!" Historia walked beside Eren. "All their clothes are in the other room and some of them probably have wallets! We'll give you all of it, if you let us live."

"Sound fair?" Eren asked.

Everything was silent, for everyone was worried about the outcome. Some were crying, some were too scared to even move. Eren and Historia's eyes pleaded to the masked gang for mercy.

... And the bullets shot at them like rain.

Eren and Historia ran away, along with everyone else, including us. We went to the other room, where all our possessions were. Kazuha was frantically searching for his stuff.

"Agh!" Eren grunted in pain. Historia went to his care immediately, seeing that his leg was shot.

"We gotta get the bullet out." Historia said. "Hold on, buddy."

Then, red was on Historia's face. The people in the room, they were being killed. Bullets were everywhere as if it replaced the air. Historia took away Eren to a corner.

"Found it!" Kazuha said as he held his sword.

"Me too." I found my spare firework. I was gonna use this for the Outlander Affairs Agency again, but I guess not anymore.

"AH!" Kazuha was getting covered in blood.

Right next to me, multiple people on the ground, multiple bullet holes in their body, pissing crimson like they were filling up a pool.

The blood on my hands, it was sticky. I held my firework close to my chest, and I looked at Kazuha, who was prepared for battle already. If only I had my bow.

Other people had knives and other weapons prepared. Most were cowering in fear, but not us. Even if we just pissed ourselves, the next thing our legs will be covered in is the blood of our enemies.

Historia came back and threw us planks of wood to use as shields. I can assume she ripped these out of the walls.

"CHARGE!" One person yelled out, and everyone who was willing to fight followed.

A bunch of naked men and women, running towards a bunch of masked people shooting guns.

And there, I shot my firework at them as I charged.

BOOM! Fire erupted from the impact, and the smoke covered the room. It wasn't done going off, so the room sparkled in bright colors.

The smoke was to our advantage, as we snuck up on the enemies and killed them. Well, not me, as soon as I shot the firework, I went back to the other room since I didn't have any weapon.

But Kazuha was dominating the battlefield, and there would be no time to clean his sword from the red. Dodging bullets and killing in seconds, he was determined to protect us.

But the massacre didn't stop just yet, as there were still people being murdered right before my very eyes.

"Stay here." Historia told Eren.

"You can't fight them..." Eren said. "Our abilities only work on the same sex. They're wearing masks, you don't know what they are..."

"Then I'll have to use the classic Kamisato technique." Historia said as she ran to get something.

I was hiding behind piles of dead bodies to prevent being killed. They were my shields now. I am so sorry. I felt each bullet hit these bodies. I wish I had my bow so I could be useful...

Historia returned with a sword that had clearly not been refined in the past few weeks. But she held it like a true experienced woman, and went into battle stance. And then, she ran into the battlefield.

She wasn't as good as Kazuha, but she was able to dodge bullets and kill others. Each slash she made was able to cut someone like butter, and she was showering in blood.

The screams of the murdered echo through my ears. As my entire body is covered in crimson and guts, I wonder what went wrong for this to happen. We haven't done anything, and these people just came in and killed us...

Eventually, the sounds of bullets stopped. I emerged from my shield of dead bodies, and rose above the corpses of many. I looked to what has happened in the other room.

Historia's sword was at this guy's throat. "WHERE DID YOU COME FROM!?"

The masked man wouldn't speak. He only spat at her.

She couldn't take it anymore, and sliced his head off. She fell to the ground in anguish. Dropped her sword, and looked at her bloody hands.

Kazuha was sitting by the wall, his hands on his forehead, troubled and stressed.

The entire two rooms were piled with bodies. Some of us lived, but most died.

Eren crawled to see the sight of what has happened. He was disturbed, but not like us... As if he has seen things worse. But still, in his eyes laid a flame. A desire for justice.

For a while, all of us stood quiet, taking in the sight of this massacre.

Until Historia sighed. "Eren, you coming?"

"Yes." He stood despite his bullet wound.

"We'll get that sorted out first." Historia said as she went to grab medical equipment from the other room.

"Then, we will kill them all."

All of us knew what that meant, and we all wanted in. Kazuha yearned for justice, and the others whom I didn't know the names of were angered at this event. Historia and Eren radiated an aura that only spoke the lust for justice.

...

Kujou Sara POV

Hour 7

If I was someone trying to avoid the Tri-Commission while trying to get to a place where every single important member is currently residing in, then I'd lay off the roads and hide in the grass.

Ayato and his guards will guard Tenshukaku in case Shinsuke ever makes it. But always prepare for the unexpected, because it is unlikely he'd walk into the usual entries. Which is why we need to catch him.

And here I am, sitting on the top of a roof like some vigilante, spying for a ripe old man above the age of 50. Yikes, now I feel bad. The guy has nothing against us, we outnumber him. Plus, his clan will probably hate him if they find out the betrayal. But unfortunately, we can't let that happen, or more specifically, we can't let the Hiiragi Clan disappear. This is the Tri-Commission, not the Bi-Commission.

"!" There, I see him. Hiding behind bushes and trying to make no noise. Unfortunately for him, you can't hide from the sky.

I jump off the roof and run to his location. There's no use being discreet or quiet, we're outside city roads.

"AAAGGH!" I screamed as I tackled him to the ground. He looked at me in utter fear and confusion. "The Divine Priestess shall see you now."

His eyes widened as he knew realized we knew about his plans. I took out some rope from my pocket to restrain him, but-

"UGH!" I was sliced on the arm with something hot, something electrifying.

I leaped backwards immediately. My hand was bleeding, and it radiated the color of purple.

I looked to Shinsuke, who suddenly looked older, yet skilled? Skilled in combat. I see what he is holding, a knife, and it glows magenta. There's no doubting it. It's a delusion.

Oh crap, that thing is affecting his thoughts. He wants to kill me.

"AH!" I said as he slashed the knife at me. I should've never underestimated an old man.

He attempted to slice me again, but I grabbed one of my arrows to block it. I can't believe I'm using my arrow as a makeshift sword.

The delusion is feeding him power, I can't keep up with his attacks for much longer. Each impact can knock me to the ground. And he is hungry for my blood.

"SHIT!" His knife broke my arrow, and I had no time to grab another, because he slashed my cheek. It hurt so bad that I fell to the ground. It won't stop bleeding, it won't stop giving me this burning feeling.

He stood before me, knife in hand, ready for the kill. This is it.

But it wasn't, because he was tackled once again, and the knife fell out of his hand. Who tackled him?

I saw a young man holding a bow and arrow to his neck. The man had furry pointy ears, similar to a dog's.

The man knocked out Shinsuke unconscious. He walked to me.

"Sorry I'm late, General Kujou."

"Ah damn it..." I'll admit, it was a bit humiliating to be saved by him, but I'll let it slide for once. "I suppose I should've predicted the Priestess would send out her most valuable soldier."

"It seems she made the right decision." Gorou said as he carried Shinsuke's body. "You were about to be killed."

"He had a delusion weapon." I stated. "That's against the law. What kind of example are we setting if the Tri-Commission commits crime and has infighting?"

"Then you need to fix the problem of the Hiiragi Clan." Gorou stated. "You need to find a leader for them."

"But Chisato had no heirs, and she was his only daughter..."

Gorou smiled. "How do we know this piece of human trash doesn't have bastard children?"

I laughed. "Well, that's certainly possible. I have no doubt Shinsuke must've been a lustful man."

"We'll discuss this later. We need to take him back to the Kamisato Estate in secret." Gorou said. "Plus, you need to be treated for those wounds. Delusions hurt more than your usual weapon."

I sighed. "Alright, General, lead the way."

We couldn't travel on the road or even the towns outside Inazuma City, so we had to take a small boat to the Kamisato Estate. It's night and darker in the waters, and the NFI doesn't really look at sea as they see no reason to. Arguably, it was a shorter ride than if we walked on the road. We had to disguise ourselves as sailors and place Shinsuke inside of a bag disguised as fish. Don't worry, we had breathing holes for him.

As we were rowing the boat, Shinsuke was trying to escape his little bag. We taped his mouth since we know he can be annoying. Gorou was getting annoyed that he was moving too much and shaking the boat, so he knocked him out again.

We bought the delusion knife with us for definitive proof that he is against the revolution.

Actually, now that I think about it, Shinsuke conspired with the Fatui once. What if the NFI...

"We're here. Get off." Gorou said as he interrupted my thoughts.

I got off the boat and carried Shinsuke with me. We went to the Kamisato Estate and entered that little basement Kokomi was hiding in.

Kokomi was quite surprised to see us holding Shinsuke inside of a bag, like we were kidnapping him. In which, she's not wrong I guess.

"Alright then, it's time for some much needed interrogation." Kokomi said as she walked closer to Shinsuke with a knife. "Provide the truth and we might prevent your head from being cut off by the Shogun for treason."

"You're the ones committing treason!" Shinsuke shouted. "This is against the NFI!"

"Oh what? What's that? Do you hear that? Do you hear anything? Because that's my fucks to give. Oh, you hear nothing? Yeah."

She brought over a chair and sat on it backwards. "So... Shinsuke, I'd like to present my question with some exposition." She looked at me and Gorou. "And you guys have to stay too, the Tri-Commission knows about the info I'm about to give, and you guys spent all your time chasing this punk."

Me and Gorou took some chairs and sat down. The show was about to begin.

"So... Human behavior." Kokomi spoke. "Is a human behavior automatically defaulted to...violence?"

"Huh?" Shinsuke said.

"Are we, as a species, automatically violent? Or are we just rebellious? Is there like a function in our brain that causes us to enact random acts of violence?"

"I..."

"If you had one night to do anything you wanted, would it be violence? Even if you are the regular citizen who holds no grudges and lives life to the most plain extent, would you burn down an entire building? Or would you just create loud disturbances like public parties."

"What are you-"

"Let me ask you a difficult and controversial question. What happens more often? Rape or murder?"

"I... I guess rape?"

"Huh, interesting, me too actually. Sexual desires are usually stronger than murderous desires. Although, robbery happened more than rape throughout the experiment as we speak. But it did happen."

Kokomi brought out a kamera. "Ayato's men bought me the latest set of pictures of data on the experiment. As of hour 5, the crime that was committed most was disorderly conduct and loud disturbances. People are literally just partying. Of course, there's the looting and vandalism, public sex, nudity, drug use. One thing that made me quite happy though was rape was relatively low. It still happens, but not on a large scale like vandalism. It shows that the people of Inazuma have basic human morals and dignity most of the time."

She swiped to the latest photo taken.

"So... Tell me. As of hour 7, why the fuck the number 1 crime being committed is Murder?"

"Wha-" Gorou was shocked.

"Huh?" I was confused too.

"I uh-" Shinsuke was trying to speak, but Kokomi cut him off.

"Behavioral patterns, adaptation to environment, conduct of the mind, you can analyze all of these and it wouldn't explain why the people are on a murderous rampage. I'd expect rape to be more widespread, but Murder? The act of taking someone else's life? In hour 6, there were only 3 murders in the night. As of hour 7, there are 500 dead. Did the devil possess the people or something? Because let me tell you something, human nature isn't automatically violent."

"Um- I-"

"But then I started thinking." Kokomi said. "The pictures Sara took before the experiment confirmed the NFI's real motivation. The statistics they hoped to achieve was pure murder. Or more specifically, control the population of lower class citizens. That's been their unrealistic goal this entire time. Human nature does not obey the laws of politics... Until tonight. Apparently, we all just have this strong desire to spread blood around the walls! That's what the NFI is saying!"

"Madam, please-"

"How perfect must this be, huh? For human nature to completely break all of its rules to benefit the needed statistics of a group that prioritizes unrealistic behavior. How amazing it must be for this experiment to be going in the NFI's favor!"

"Please-"

"I'll cut the bullshit right now. The NFI is manipulating the experiment to get the statistics they need, which is murder." Kokomi put the pointy end of the knife close to Shinsuke's face. "Tell me, old man, what did the NFI do."

...

Yoimiya POV

Holy shit, Historia looks so hot as she's literally walking butt ass naked amidst burning buildings while holding a sword.

Wait, what was I doing?

Oh yeah.

I-

Hour 8

We all got clothed except Eren and Historia. We ventured into the outside world, looking for the purgers behind the massacre at our little party. What we didn't expect to find was dead bodies in every street. Gunshots, hanged, smashed in, corpses were everywhere. It's almost as if everyone became a monster.

"Look out!" Emiko shouted at Eren.

Eren took notice of the masked man coming towards him with a machete. As the hand slashed at Eren, he caught him by the wrist. Eren's hips thrust into the purger's, both of their cocks now touching each

other. Even though they were separated by cloth, the purger felt it all the same and cummed until unconscious.

Emiko was one of the only survivors of the Whorehouse Massacre. He came along with us for the same reason we went with Eren and Historia. Revenge.

"Ah!" Ena was grabbed by another masked murderer, female this time. A knife was at her throat, but Historia stepped in and made her breasts jiggle in front of Ena and the female purger. Both were salivating and distracted, giving Historia the chance to punch the masked purger and free Ena.

Ena was another person like Emiko, a survivor of the massacre and came with us for justice.

And here I am, with Kazuha.

It seemed no matter where we went, there were people trying to murder us and each other. Gangs who's pure motive is to murder.

But Eren and Historia had an ability stronger than all of our skills combined. The power of being extremely gay. Thus, they were able to protect us with ease whilst providing quite the show.

"We need to find a safe place to wait out the night." Historia said. "Is there anywhere safe in Ritou?"

"The Outlander Affairs Agency." I said. "The place may as well be a giant maze. No one has infiltrated it yet since it's so secure for the night. Except the top floor window, which I had just blown hours hours prior."

"Are you sure no one's in there?" Eren asked.

"No one can get in unless they're able to fly to that broken window."

"Well how the hell are we gonna fly!? We're not birds!" Kazuha said.

"Fly..." Eren was clearly wondering. "I didn't think I'd have to use this again..."

"What are you saying?" Historia asked.

"Uh, we'll discuss it when we get there. Let's just focus on going there."

"Watch out. Behind us." Kazuha faced backwards as we walked. He detected purgers coming towards us.

And began their fight. Kazuha was easily better than the three purgers who were trying to kill us. The sounds of swords erupted behind us, but we kept moving forward, and I kept looking behind me to make sure Kazuha wasn't being left behind.

"AH SHIT!" I shouted as a literal explosive was thrown above us, landing in the building next to us. We immediately left the explosion radius and watched it go boom and destroy the building into pieces. The smoke was everywhere.

Kazuha finished killing the people after us, but there were immediately more coming to us from our right.

Emiko pulled out a gun and started shooting. The 4 purgers that came out did the same. Historia handed Ena and me some pistols, and we joined the chaos.

Eren was struggling to move due to his wound, so he had to be assisted by Historia when dodging bullets. But he could definitely still kill as long as he had the power of uh being gay.

"I GOT ONE!" Ena said after killing one of the enemies. Definitely weird to be excited about killing someone, but everyone's doing it now apparently.

Ah! I got one too! I killed someone! HAHAAHAHAHA!

"Identified them?" Eren asked Historia.

"Yup. All men." Historia answered.

"Good... Throw me to them."

And just like he asked, Historia held Eren like a baseball and threw his butt naked ass at the 2 remaining male purgers. Through Eren's sheer ability, his cock landed in both of their mouths at the same time, even though it shouldn't physically be possible. They both loved the taste so much that they died lmao.

"Damn, this is actually a good technique." Historia said as she picked up Eren again and carried him.

"We should do that more often!" Eren somehow agreed with her.

And then, bullets rained behind us and we had to immediately hide behind a small broken brick wall. There was a purger inside of a truck shooting with a machine gun. There were people dying everywhere in this area, and Emiko just got shot on the arm. I was helping with his injury by trying to stop the bleeding.

"It doesn't fucking end." Historia said as she tried shooting her gun at the truck, but she wasn't exactly looking as she stayed behind the wall at all times. Obviously, she missed. "Okay... I'm gonna have to do this."

"Do what?" I asked.

Historia touched my breast, and I blushed redder than blood.

"I'm trying to become so gay that I can deflect bullets." She stated.

"Historia..." Eren said. "You're gonna two if you're gonna do this..."

"Damn, you right." Historia proceeded to take Ena and kiss her.

It's not fair! It should be me she's kissing! But- "NYAA~~" She started fingering me and sucking on Ena's tits. Both of us moaned like primates, and Historia was making us discover fire, and my hole was sweating.

Historia laid both of us down next to each other, and she began to eat my pussy.

YES! YES! MORE! EAT ME MORE! I LOVE YOU, HISTORIA! PLEASE! YES YES YES! LICK MY JUICES! LET ME BE A PART OF YOU! USE TEETH! PLEASE USE TEETH! BITE ME! LET ME FEEL YOUR FANGS SCRAPE MY INSIDES! MAKE ME BLEED! PAINT MY LEGS RED WITH MY OWN!

"AAAHHH!!" I was cumming, my liquids covered Historia's face and so did Ena's liquids cover Historia's body.

She stood up, above our exhausted satisfied bodies. Historia did not wipe away our juices, she wore it like perfume, made it a part of herself like sweat.

As she stood above the brick wall, the purger aimed at her and started shooting bullets.

But the bullets seemed to change trajectory when they approached her, and they would go around her instead of hitting her. She had done it, she had become gay enough to create a shield.

The purger kept shooting, they didn't know what to do, Historia wouldn't be shot, and she kept walking closer and closer to the truck.

And she reached their location, and they tried lunging a knife at her, but her ability deflected the slash and sent the knife to the air, and it landed on the purger's face.

"Good news, guys." Historia called to us. "We got a machine gun now."

Me and Ena carried our newfound weapon. All of us kept moving forward amidst the fire and blood in Ritou. Death, everywhere. I truly wonder if the world has gone to shit.

And then, we made it to the Outlander Affairs Agency. We were still surrounded by chaos, so we had to act fast.

"Eren, now!" Historia said. "Whatever you were planning!"

"Okay..." Eren took a deep breath. "Didn't think I'd ever have to use this again. Thank the Great Old Ones for Ei."

He bought out a weird watch and wore it. It began to glow.

"What's that?" Emiko asked.

"SkyTree technology." Eren said as he kissed Emiko on the lips while gripping his testicles. Kazuha was next to me, clearly furious that it wasn't him that was getting kissed.

Eren was so horny that he began to blush, and suddenly, he began to float.

"Uh- what's happening?" Historia was confused.

"Grab my leg yall." Eren said in the air. "I'll fly us up there. Hurry up before I stop being horny."

And so we did, and he flew us to the top floor of the building, into the window I broke.

We entered the inside of the building, and like I predicted, the firework I threw earlier broke alot of the stuff in here.

"We'll wait this one out for the time being." Historia said. "You better be right, Yoimiya, that no one can break in here unless they fly."

"Yeah! Of course!"

And then, I saw a figure behind Historia, hiding in the shadows. Someone, wearing a mask covered in blood and engraved with the words "Hello." A purger.

God damn it, me.

Chapter 8: Take my hand.

...

...

...

"Hey, wake up!" Haruhi shook Kyon's sleeping body. "We gotta get to the club room!"

"A minute..." Kyon responded, half-awake, consumed by his school desk.

"The others are gonna think we're slacking off!"

"Asahina could use a day without you toying with her."

Haruhi pouted. "I'm just doing what's good for the club..."

"Well... I'm not exactly complaining either." Kyon smiled.

"Pervert." Haruhi slammed the desk. "And why are you looking at her!? Focus on the awesome leader!"

"I'll call you awesome if you don't forget the food."

"Of course I won't forget the food! You're coming over to my house, and I always treat my guests magnificently."

...

"Yeah I forgot." Haruhi said. Kyon was sitting in her living room.

Kyon sighed. "I'll cook something for us."

"No!" Haruhi stopped Kyon the moment he began to walk. "Let me cook!"

"Get off me!"

"I swear I'm good at it!"

"What are you, my housewife?"

"Idiot, you're in MY house! It's my job to-"

"Okay fine!" Kyon gave in. "Just...cook something. Sure."

Haruhi sighed a breath of relief. "See? Wasn't so hard, huh." She walked to the kitchen. "I can guarantee what I'll make is gonna send you to Heaven!"

"That sounds like you're going to poison me."

Minutes later, Haruhi came back with yakisoba. Kyon wouldn't admit it, but it looked delicious.

"Eat up." Haruhi said.

To Kyon's despair, it tasted good. She was really good at cooking. She's just bad at everything else. But he thought it was nice that she wanted to do this for him. Sometimes, she really was kind. Sometimes.

Kyon was peacefully eating his yakisoba while staring blankly. Until he smelled more close to his cheek, to which he turned and saw Haruhi with chopsticks holding the food, hovering a piece close to his mouth.

"Eat it." Haruhi commanded.

"What are you doing." Kyon asked dumbfounded.

"Feeding you, duh."

"No, that's weird."

"You're weird!"

"You told me to come over so we can 'collect data' or something." Kyon stated.

"Yeah! That's what we're doing!" Haruhi sounded like she genuinely believed in that.

"This is a date!" Kyon snapped.

"No its not!" Haruhi yelled.

"You're trying to do date stuff!"

"This is for science!"

"No!"

"Just eat the damn yakisoba!" Haruhi was beyond frustrated.

"I'll eat my own!"

"Eat it!"

"No!"

"Eat it!"

"No!"

"Just do it!"

"Fine!" Kyon gave up.

They both just kinda stared at each other for a while, while the yakisoba hovered between them.

Kyon spoke. "Are you gonna do it or-"

"I'm getting to it!" Haruhi said.

And finally, she placed the yakisoba inside his mouth, and he ate it.

"See? Wasn't so hard." Haruhi returned to eating her own plate.

Until Haruhi noticed a piece of yakisoba hovering beside her cheek, held by Kyon.

"It's for science." Kyon said.

Haruhi didn't say anything, she just pouted.

"Go on, eat it." Kyon smiled.

Haruhi silently resisted for a few seconds, but eventually surrendered at ate the food, to which she proceeded to pick up another piece to feed Kyon with.

Somewhere within Haruhi's heart, she knew that she didn't need the extraordinary, nor the supernatural, she just needed him. He's worth more than the universe.

...

Another day, another time to visit the brigade and go through Haruhi's shenanigans. Kyon walked to the clubroom, expecting Haruhi to suggest something abnormal.

Instead, he found her treating Asahina, who seemed to be hurt.

"What happened?" Kyon asked.

"Someone who was playing baseball threw the ball and hit her leg." Haruhi said as she wrapped Asahina's thigh with her handkerchief.

"It was an accident on their part..." Asahina said.

"I don't give a shit." Haruhi responded. "Rest in the clubroom, don't do much physical activity, I'll take care of you."

"T-Thanks, Haruhi..." Asahina said, yet unsure of their own words. Kyon wondered why, but it was still nice to see Haruhi care for someone. She is genuinely a nice person when she can be.

"Stay here, I'm getting more bandages." Haruhi left the room. "Watch over her, Kyon."

"Okay..." Kyon said. He moved to Asahina's side. "You okay?"

"I'm much more worried about Haruhi..." Asahina said.

"Why so?"

Her face turned to pure worry. "What she did to the guy who accidentally injured me..." Asahina's hand covered her mouth. "She broke his nose, and he got sent to the clinic. And she took pleasure in it too, proclaiming my name during it as justice. She was about to do worse until others stopped her..."

For one's companions, for one's fellowship, for the care you have for them. To a girl, they mattered more than the world. Ah, the things we do for love.

...

"Dad?" Lezabel walked into Lucifer's giant devil form. He looked for his father everywhere. Entering his bedroom, where the walls are plastered with a hundred tiny pictures of God herself, who he claims to be his "mother." He spotted him, doing his usual errands of being obsessed with this person who doesn't love him back. That's what he never liked about his father, but he's still a good father. He just wishes he didn't kill his mother. Or maybe, he wished her birth didn't come from his dad forcing himself upon her mother.

"Ah, Lezabel." Lucifer finally noticed him. "What brings you to my chambers?"

Okay, this is it. The moment Lezabel has been nervous about. "Can I tell you something?"

"Anything, daughter."

It made his heart ache. "Promise me that nothing will change and you'll still love me all the same, okay?"

Lucifer laughed. "Of course."

Lezabel took a deep breath before speaking his truth, a truth that he had always been afraid of speaking for the reaction of his father. But if he didn't reveal it now, then it would be never.

"Father, I am a man."

"You're a man?"

"I..." He was having trouble articulating the words. "I don't think I'm a woman. I feel-"

"You wanna be a trans man?" He asked, his expression unchanging.

"Y-Yes!" He answered immediately. "I've had alot of time to think about my identity and...I want this."

Lucifer smiled. "If that's what you want, go for it. If you want me to call you my son, then I will."

"...Just like that?" She was surprised on how unproblematic this was.

"Yup." Lucifer said. "Although don't ask me for the transition surgery part. Not really an expert there. Ask Azazel or something."

"I wasn't going to!"

"Ah, I get it, you were afraid I wouldn't accept you."

"Yeah, that's why I was nervous!"

"Well, have your fears been resolved?"

"...Yeah."

"Well I can pretend to be disappointed if you want your life to be interesting-"

"No no no, I'm fine." Lezabel said. "Thank you, father."

"You don't have to be afraid to tell me anything." Lucifer stated. "I'm always gonna be here for you."

Lezabel was more than thankful.

"Oh, are you gonna change your name?" Lucifer asked. " 'Lezabel' is a female name."

"I probably will." He responded.

"What are you thinking, buddy."

He thought about it for a few seconds. "Does Beelzebub sound nice?"

Beyond his dangerous and unhealthy obsession, the devil cares.

...

"Mom?" Beelzebub went into the parts of the devil beast form that contained a dungeon. There laid his mother, and the mothers of his siblings.

Cries and moans and screams of insanity ruled the place. Women, with bodies destroyed beyond digestion. What did they do to deserve this? Nothing. All they did was somewhat resemble the Devil's love.

"I'm here with food, mother." Beelzebub stood in front of his mom's cell. She looked at him.

Her milk white skin, her long hair with a few patches of balding, her tired defeated eyes, and her bloody destroyed private parts. Her breasts laid red on the floor, ripped out of her chest. Her tongue, gone, eaten

by herself, and forced to by Lucifer. And in the end, all of this would heal when father comes down to the dungeons to relieve some sick twisted fantasy, and they would be broken all over again.

Some women haven't felt a single thing in centuries, as Lucifer left them to rot. They cannot die, they can only beg. What was once pain for them becomes a wish, to feel something other than this cold wet bloody floor and the stinking air of their own shit. Some are lucky to receive his blessing, begging to be used like a toy.

Beelzebub offered the melon to his mother, he placed it inside her cell. For a moment, her mother thought he was his father, and she ran to the end of the cell, crying for God.

"Mother, it's me, your dau- well, son now." Beelzebub said. "Lezabel? You recognize that name, right? That's me, well, uh, not anymore, it's complicated. I am not sure if transgenderism was a thing in the 13th century." He was speaking as if everything that was happening around him was normal. These demonic torture chambers.

His mother ran to the food like a dog and devoured it on all fours. The other women near her cell begged Beelzebub for food.

"Sorry... Nothing on me right now. Maybe next time." Beelzebub told them. "Mother, do you love me?"

She never looked at him, she just kept eating. Maybe she doesn't comprehend the meaning of children anymore.

"I'll be back in a few years, like always. A short wait." Beelzebub said, not knowing the full human condition. "Bye, mother." Beelzebub exited the dungeons as the women screamed deafening madness.

All he knows is that father forced himself upon these women, but he never truly knows what that means. Lucifer never really taught his son what rape is.

...

Michael POV

I left the Garden of Eden with the objective to blocking the gateway between Heaven and Purgatory, but I couldn't because some bitch ass angel of peace kept messing up my plans to put a huge brick wall on the entrance. So I just gave up and walked down the mountain to see what I can do about the Hell Army that definitely arrived.

And then, as I was making my way down the mountain, I saw him. Com Insydeme. Nothing can describe the rage I felt in that moment. I beat his ass and kept moving. He's not worth thinking about.

I walked down further and further to see that both the Hell and Heaven armies have gathered and are on standby on Ante Purgatory whilst The Devil and Haruhi talk in the Garden.

I was planning to go back up to the Garden to see how their conversation was going and to see if there was anything there I could do to prevent the war.

But...

"AAGGHHH!!!" Haruhi screamed in her massive divine form as she punched one of the Devil's giant faces, and the face laughed.

I'm guessing the conversation didn't go well.

And as soon as the two deities grew taller than the mountain and started fighting, that was the indication the armies needed to start The Battle of Purgatory.

On Ante Purgatory, the millions of soldiers fought in this cramped space that wasn't big enough to support them all. Many fought on the mountain as well, disrupting the process of cleansing souls. People were falling off the mountain and using what the trials provided them to battle, like the giant rocks they had to carry. It wasn't long before the mountain was painted red.

Now see, the problem with a war in the afterlife is that unless the soul is erased, no one is actually "dying." So the goal was to inflict the biggest of pains to the point men are paralyzed.

No matter how much blood one would lose, if they still had the strength to fight, then they would. But for the weak, they cannot rest, and can only wallow on the ground as everyone is against each other, spitting out an abnormal amount of pain.

The mountain of Purgatory is mainly occupied by the Hell Army, who were climbing the place when they could so they could get into Heaven, but now the trials have stopped due to the battle. The Heaven Army is trying to climb the mountain and kill as many of the Hell Army as they can, but they are at an disadvantage as they are the ones on bottom.

External factors affecting the battle in the mountain are Haruhi and The Devil themselves, as each time they hit each other the more the realm would shake like an earthquake, causing people to fall off or the structures of the mountain to shift and twist, and some parts to break and fall to the Ante Purgatory battle.

Me? I'm trying my damn hardest to not fall from the mountain. I'm hanging on for dear life in the 5th terrace. Trees from the Garden are constantly falling around me. I'm constantly trying to avoid fighting others, since all around me are Hell Soldiers. Actually, what Army am I part of-

BOOM! The Devil kicked Haruhi really fuckin hard and made the realm shake again. Not only is this shit making me real dizzy, but there's an avalanche of rocks falling above me. I run for dear life, everywhere around me people are being crushed. The Divine do not care if they kill their own soldiers.

AH SHIT. The shaking slipped me to the point I almost fell off the mountain, and I'm holding on for the love of everything that is holy with a single hand on the edge. The shaking hasn't stopped yet, my hand is losing its grip. I can't call out for God's mercy, it doesn't exist anymore.

"AAAHHH!!" I screamed as my hand lost its hold, and I fell from the mountain. As the ground flies up to me, I can only wonder what it's like to die in the afterlife. There's nothing beyond after the erasing of the soul.

And then I stopped falling, and floated in the air. No, I was grabbed by golden claws that dug deep into my flesh. And I heard the sound of wings flapping, and I saw a glimpse of their crimson color. It was a Fallen Angel.

"Come, vessel of Nyarlathotep." He said.

"You know me?" I asked.

"I do." He replied. "Do you want a wide view of everything that is happening?"

"Why would you give me that."

"Why not?"

And so, he flew up, higher than Haruhi and The Devil's battle, higher than the mountain, above them all. I watched as fire and blood spread across Purgatorio. What was a place for change was now a den of sin.

And also, God and the Devil's fist fight. Even as we were flying, the shaking of the realm could make us lose direction.

"Isn't it beautiful?" The Fallen Angel said. "Chaos."

"It's horrible." I replied. "So many people, driven to their worst parts, especially those two."

"God and Lucifer had the chance of reconciliation. God had the chance of forgiveness, and Lucifer had the chance of moving on."

"But they didn't."

"Aye. And who do you think did that?" He laughed. "It's funny how the death of one simple man can...result in this."

"Kyon." I said with sorrow.

"It's a domino effect." He continued. "Haruhi became human, Haruhi loved Kyon, Lucifer became jealous, he killed Kyon and took away Haruhi's human life, she went back to being God, a life she hated, and she grieved the loss of Kyon, and since no one was there to console her because she was God she went mad with vengeance. While I... I whispered devious things inside Lucifer's ear, and made him more obsessed with Haruhi, to the point she was all he could think about. I made him delusional. It was Lucifer's behavior that tipped her beyond the edge, and that's thanks to me. But I know that this war isn't enough, that's why I encouraged outside factors to burn Heaven and Hell with Wildfire, and made sure only the most greedy were made powerful in this conspiracy, for they would fight for supremacy. Soon, Cersei Lannister's group will fight Light Yagami's group in Heaven. And who knows? Maybe more betrayals shall come. And best of all, I am the one who brought Aladiel down to Hell, and made him Cersei's dog. He'll do anything anyone says if it means fucking that golden haired bitch. I told him to say a few words to Haruhi, words that would fuel her hatred of Lucifer, and bring her beyond the point of forgiveness. I rewarded him graciously, but lust always demands more. I guess you could say I started this war."

"Why?" I asked. "Why all of this..."

"Because this universe needs true balance." He replied. "The system is black and white and it's idea of sin is flawed. Breath and you'll go to hell. What is the true way for the afterlife? Easy, there shouldn't be an afterlife. Death is supposed to be final. What should happen after you die is purely nothing. That is balance attained, and I will stop at nothing to achieve it. And what better way for Heaven and hell to be destroyed other than the human condition? Emotions. They cut deeper than sharpness."

"...Who are you." I asked.

The Fallen Angel chuckled. "I am Azazel, the hand of corruption."

"I'll remember that name." I said. "If you remember mine, because you will be begging me for mercy once I am done with you. You will live in fear of Michael Jackson."

"And what can a lowly musician do to me? An Angel?"

"I fear you haven't been paying attention to the battle." I said.

Haruhi looked like she was about to throw a powerful punch since her fist was glowing light that could blind a man.

"See ya." I said to Azazel.

BAM! Haruhi's punch destroyed one of the Devil Form's heads into pieces. The punch alone was powerful to shake the entire realm like it was a drink being prepared. Everyone flew everywhere, and Azazel was affected by the shaking, and his grip on me was gone and I flew.

As literally everything around us was flying in the air, it was like a platforming game for me. I was doing parkour on mountain rocks, people, weapons, demons, all to make sure I reach my destination, Haruhi herself.

If I can get inside her big ass divine form and stop her, then maybe...

If I could just talk to her, then maybe just maybe! I can- OH SHIT.

"You're not getting away from me that easy." Azazel came to back to capture me. Flying was safer than whatever I was doing, but he was driving me away from Haruhi.

"LET ME GO!" I screamed.

"It's useless, Michael..." Azazel whispered in my ear. "She's too far gone..."

"If Gamebang can talk no jutsu Alizeh, then I can convince Haruhi!" I kept moving frantically to escape Azazel.

"Oh you fool..." Azazel held me tight.

Until BAM! Azazel's arms were cut off, letting me go. As I was about to fall, I was caught by the person who sliced off his arms. I looked at them.

"Com?" I said.

Com Insydeme held me tight as he jumped all around the flying chaos like parkour, getting us closer and closer to Haruhi.

"You don't have to forgive me." Com stated. "But I want to help. That's the least I can do."

I was filled with mixed emotions. I felt rage, disgust, confusion, gratefulness, yet anger all the same. A part of me wanted to punch this man for betraying me, for helping Alizeh. I wanted him to let me go for I cannot trust him after he destroyed my trust.

And yet, despite all of that, I held on tight.

...

Jaime Lannister POV

"Come on!" I yelled for my newfound companions to hurry. "I see the gate to Purgatory!"

VRAAAUUMMM!! The Wildfire turned the grey floors of the 1st into black. Heaven was indistinguishable from Hell now, it had become that hot. The gate to Purgatory is right there, and maybe the other side will be less chaotic than here.

"We're gonna make i- AHH!" Guizhong suddenly stopped, and I looked behind to see why. Looks like my hunch was right. He wouldn't let his hostage escape, me.

"Stand down, Lannister, or I will cut her throat." Light Yagami appeared and held Guizhong by the neck. "I know how much you care for innocents."

"Damn you!" I unsheathed my sword and charged towards him. I should've thought about my plan more, and now an innocent will be hurt because of my bait.

"Let go of her!" Makoto yelled as she threw lightning at Light, but he responded by using Guizhong as a shield. She screamed in pain and Makoto stopped her attack immediately. Light threw an injured Guizhong on the ground and pointed at me.

Suddenly, his Angelic followers came from above and took hold of me, holding me like a crucified man.

"Can't rely on Aladiel these days..." Light said as he ordered his followers to raise me higher in the air so that my companions would have a harder time getting me back. "Kill his team." Light commanded.

They began to throw a ton of their little cloth grenades at the ones who were coming for them. Soon enough, more of Light's non angelic followers came with swords they stole from the 5th, regular mortal souls who have betrayed their God in favor of a false. I was primarily worried for Tolkien's safety.

"Jaime!" Ai yelled as she pulled out more handkerchiefs. Sucrose's hands were getting tired of cooking, and Makoto was clearly draining.

"Let them go!" I begged and yelled. "Leave them alone and I'll voluntarily go to Cersei!"

"Leave them so they can come back for us?" Light said. "I don't think so."

"DAMN YOU!"

But this wasn't the worst thing that had happened. Not by a long shot. An army came out of that gate, holding snakes and other demonic objects. Leading them, sitting upon a throne of spears carried by others was the blood of my blood, and I wasn't pleased to see her again.

Cersei was immediately shocked by the sight that was occurring. "LIGHT!" She yelled. "WHAT IS THE MEANING OF THIS!"

"Stand back, whore, or I will kill your brother. Your lover." Light said.

"Ex-lover, but okay." I said quietly.

Light's followers aimed their weapons at Cersei's followers.

"This is wrong." Cersei was fuming. "Your men should be following me. I commanded you to bring me an army from Heaven! You betrayed me and made your own, and now you challenge my reign!?"

"You are no fit to be a ruler of these realms. But I am."

"I shall have your head for this."

"Not before your brother's is cut."

"NO!" Cersei swiftly yelled.

"Yield, or I will slice his head off." Light said as his angel held a sword to my neck.

Cersei looked troubled. She looked around for answers, but only found terror. As the Wildfire consumed the areas around us, she took too long of thinking.

"Very well." Light said. "I should've mentioned I wasn't the only traitor."

"What?" Cersei asked.

Walter White, her right hand man, came at her side and knocked her unconscious. Suddenly, her army didn't know what to do.

"Gracious work, Heisenberg." Light said to Walt. "You shall be rewarded handsomely."

Walt bought out a pistol he had hidden in his pocket and shot at Light. Half of his head blown to bits. Of course, he's not dead, but it would take years to regenerate the damage. Light's followers were also confused and unsure of what to do.

"You are mine now." Walt said to Cersei's followers. "Kill the remaining of Light's soldiers. If you disobey, then I shall have Barney punish you." He turned to his right hand man. "Right, Barney?"

Barney emerged from the shadows like a ghost. He looked Walt in the eye and smiled. "You know nothing, Walter White." He punched Walt in the face.

Walt, fueled with rage, says. "KILL HIM AND THE ARMY!"

"He ordered your executions." Barney said to Light's followers. "And he ordered mine. He is your real enemy now, and we will fight until this realm is ours."

They all screamed for Barney. They were his men now. And so were Cersei's, they were Walt's army now.

"CHARGE!" Walter White commanded.

Betrayal after betrayal, the deeds of Greed come to blood, the desire for power rises above cooperation and breaks the status that had been set. Walt's men and Barney's charged at each other. And soon enough, they battled in explosive bloody madness.

"Jesus christ." I said. Then, Makoto electrocuted the angels holding me captive and set me free. The fall from high was rough, but I was still alive.

"Is there any way to stop the Wildfire?" Sucrose asked me.

"No, the damage is done." I stated. "And I don't know how many barrels are left, because it seems the explosions aren't stopping anytime soon."

"Aladiel must've brought lots." Makoto said.

"Wait, where's Aladiel?" I asked.

I was answered with a flying angel above, carrying my mad sister. Aladiel had kidnapped an unconscious Cersei.

I wasn't going to let it finish like that. I had to finish what I started. "You guys head into Purgatory." I told the team. "I'll stay here."

"What?" MLK was confused. "But-"

"I need to kill Cersei." I stated. "Erase her soul and leave her at nothing. Blood will only shed as long as she lives, and she has set the realm on green fire."

"If that is the case." MLK took my hand. "We're coming with you."

...

Morbius POV

"Vengeance won't fix your problems." The Electro Archon told me.

"Nothing will." I responded.

"You can still turn back." She told me.

"I can't." I stated. "They're coming for me, the NFI. I'm a threat. And I will show them the same mercy they gave me."

The night sky glittered with stars, a sight Gwen would've loved. Then, she would've thrown up from seasickness. It's brighter than usual, and yet it feels wrong. It should be dark, for the loss of life.

Actually, it looks kinda green. That's weird.

"It is an honor serving you, your grace." Beidou brought food for the Shogun, but none for me.

"I am forever grateful for your service, captain." Ei replied.

If I had a nickel for every person I knew that was named Ei, I'd have 2 nickels. Which is weird that it'd happen twice. One is a warrior who wields horniness, and the other is an Archon.

"If you'll have us, we'd fight alongside you for your cause." Beidou asked. "We have friends in Inazuma who can be gravely affected by the NFI."

"You may join me at your own volition, and I'll be thankful either way." Ei said.

"Awesome." Beidou went away to do other matters.

"I have a friend in Inazuma too." I said. "I'll be damned if he also gets killed."

"He will be safe." Ei assured me.

"He will be. I'll make damn sure of it." I replied. "Everyone treats you so elegantly. I was treated like some kind of joke because of a bad movie I starred in. The only people to treat me like a person are either dead or endangered." I know damn well the rest of my friends are being hunted by the NFI, or dead. Probably not Michael though, he wouldn't die that easily.

"Do you think of yourself as a joke?" She asked.

"I think of myself as useless. I can't seem to stop losing the people in my life." Martine and Gwen...

"We all lose someone." Ei said. "I still miss my sister."

"Yeah? Well, how did you-"

"ATTACKERS INCOMING!" One of the crewmen shouted. Me and Ei were immediately on high alert as we saw small boats below the ship, with Nobushi climbing their way up here. There was no doubt, it was the NFI.

"There will be blood." I said as I prepared for battle. Ei stood by, spear in hand.

And then, the battle commenced. Every crewmate was fighting against the Nobushi. Beidou was fighting with her big ass sword and knocking enemies off the deck. I was using my Morb abilities to attack these guys, and I did not give mercy. Ei was using her powers more than me.

Beidou kept spinning her weapon around and knocking out anyone near her. I made sure to make my opponents bleed before pushing them to the sea. Lightning rained from the sky as Ei commanded it to strike her enemies. One crewmate had amazing knife skills.

The NFI isn't stopping anytime soon. They want me dead, and they want Ei captive. But we will fight as long as it takes.

A Nobushi tried grabbing me, but I retaliated quickly and broke their nose. I pinned them on the edge of the ship, making sure they know I can make them fall off anytime. I started punching their face, spewing out more blood. It felt good, the pain from my knuckles. Seeing this man's eyes pop out. Their screams for mercy. It was all so good. I needed it. I needed their blood. NFI blood. I want to cover the deck with more crimson. No. I need to cover the entire Sacred Sakura with their blood.

I threw the guy off the ship and continued to my next enemy.

...

Kujou Sara POV

I felt the obligation to go back to Tenshukaku and inform my brother of the new developments in the experiment. The truth. But let me tell you, traveling back to back from the Estate to the city is the most tiring thing ever. I have walked so much tonight, I must be fitter than I already am. My legs must be made of iron muscle by now.

I made it back to Tenshukaku and made Ayato turn off the cameras in the bathroom so me and Kamaji can have another private talk.

"So..." I spoke while in a bathroom stall, next to Kamaji. "The statistics of high murder rate. It's not real. Well, the murder is, but not the way you think."

"How so." Kamaji asked.

"About 30% of the participants in the experiment are actually not normal Inazuman citizens, they're Nobushi hired by the NFI. Their goal is to murder and rampage the streets so that the level of participation, murder rates in their language, is high, resulting in the experiment looking like a success to the public and the government. That would make it a guaranteed pass to make the experiment a law." I explained with disgust in my mouth. "They're sending soldiers into Ritou disguised as citizens, and ordering them to murder innocents. It's a massacre."

"Jesus." Kamaji sounded uneasy. "Shinsuke confessed this?"

"After some torture, yes he did."

"It's only a matter of time before the Hiiragi Clan learns that he has betrayed the revolution."

"If that's the case, then Shinsuke may as well be exiled from them once again."

"Yeah..." Kamaji was silent for a while, and then spoke nervously. "Can you go back to the Estate?"

I was annoyed. "Dear brother, I had to travel to the same two places two times tonight, and now you're asking for a third? It's like a couple hundred meters and that's not easy."

"I know, but please, just this once."

"Why?" I asked, actually concerned.

"Uh... Inform the Priestess." Kamaji said, yet unsure. "I ask this not as your leader, but your brother."

"...Well, I guess I can do it." I reluctantly agreed. "Don't do anything stupid while I'm gone."

And thus, I left the bathroom, and Tenshukaku. I started the long walk back to the Estate.

Hour 9

"I'm baaaccckk." I said as I entered the basement where Kokomi was. She's been here for like the entire day, I am wondering how she's still sane.

OH- I swiftly stepped to the side to dodge the glass cup Kokomi threw at me. It shattered everywhere, and the sound was piercing. Maybe she wasn't sane afterall.

Kokomi looked angry. "You fucking idiots." She said. "You absolute imbeciles."

"Something wron-

She slammed her table. "Shut the fuck up, you goddamn train wreck."

"What did I-

She slammed her table. "I can't believe you guys are so stupid. Do I actually have to watch your every move!?"

"Your grace, I don-

She slammed her table. "You should've stayed with Kamaji, you shit."

"If you're asking me to go back then yall are seriously killing me. You guys underestimate how long the distance between here and Tenshukaku is-

She slammed her table, harder. "Do you know what has happened in the 60 minutes you've been out of the news!? That time you spent traveling from there to here!? 60 minutes, and that's all it took to fuck it all up!"

I didn't actually know it took me an hour to get back here. I was just suffering from traveling. Nice to know it was exactly an hour. "What happened?"

Kokomi took deep breaths. She seemed to calm down now. "Oh who am I kidding... What will being hard at you do. Especially after this..."

"Huh?"

"Sara, here." She threw me a document. I caught it and read 'Written by Ayaka.' "I am sorry." Kokomi proceeded to go into her bags and other possessions.

I read the document.

...

...

...

..

.

Kamaji's dead?

"..."

Kamaji contacted a General of the Hiiragi Clan and exposed Shinsuke's betrayal to the revolution and informed the General to reveal it to the rest of the clan.

Reports say that Kamaji confronted Holden Hiscok himself in his office and revealed that he knew of the statistical corruption of the experiment involving Nobushi. Kamaji threatened to expose this information to the public and stop everything right there.

Holden Hiscok called his Nobushi and beheaded Kamaji right here on the spot, inside his office. They cleaned the evidence and are still in the process of cremation with the body.

Ayaka noticed Kamaji's strange behavior, the places in Tenshukaku he was going to. She overheard him calling the Hiiragi General in the bathroom. This occurred shortly after I left him. Ayaka proceeded to secretly follow Kamaji wherever he went, and that was to Holden Hiscok's office. She did not enter, but she listened behind the doors. Ayato made sure the cameras didn't catch her. She heard the beheading.

The NFI has branded Kamaji's death as suicide, without revealing that he didn't even have a head anymore. Stating that Kamaji has been dealing with mental health problems and that the pressure of the experiment got to him. A sorry excuse, but a believable one.

The Hiiragi Clan, who were mostly aligned with the revolution, were severely angered by Shinsuke's betrayal and exiled him as leader. The NFI noticed this uprising and ordered to the secret executions of each member that were against them, aka everyone. 30 minutes after I left, 15 minutes after Kamaji's death, Nobushi invaded every known Hiiragi base and murdered its members. Not all of them, however, some are on the run and were declared fugitives. We have no idea where these members are, but they're surely all separated from each other.

"Have you reached the part about the Hiiragi Clan?" Kokomi asked me.

I nodded, too distraught to even speak.

"Then you should see this." Kokomi threw a dismembered hand onto the floor, blood spilling everywhere. The sight of red frightened me at this moment. "This is Shinsuke." Kokomi stated. "Idiot managed to escape the Estate, but he couldn't escape a ruin sentinel that he encountered. You know how Narukumi Island is, full of these guys."

"But... There's only two spawn locations for Ruin Sentinels here."

"I'm saying is that he almost got away, and he got far. It took Gorou a good 30 minutes to find what was left of him, and it wasn't much. Gorou defeated the Sentinel and cleaned the evidence of his death, other than this hand." Kokomi sighed. "As far as I know, the Hiiragi Clan is finished. It's members are on the run and declared criminals, and it's only leader is dead, and unless we can find some kind of secret heir, they're done."

I stood still. My whole body felt cold and it didn't feel like I was touching this piece of paper in my hands. A weird stasis, a numb feeling until my mind manages to comprehend that my brother is dead. My brother is dead.

I try to evade those thoughts and continued to read the document.

Holden Hiscok is still sending Nobushi to find Shinsuke. Afterall, he's the right hand man. But also... He's sending Nobushi to come find me?

"The idea of a revolution has just landed in Holden Hiscok's head." Kokomi said. "You don't wanna hear this, but you have to. The Kujou Clan is also finished."

"W-What?"

"Your absence from Tenshukaku speaks volumes. No one knew where the hell you were during the hour you were gone. When the Kujou Clan members heard of Kamaji's death, they were outraged. They didn't even know the truth... But they know Kamaji died for the truth. Your Clan went outside their boundaries and assaulted multiple Nobushi in protest, some publicly declared war. The NFI assumed that your entire clan was against them now, so..."

I did not want to hear it. But I knew. The people of my clan were declared fugitives. They're running away.

And if the entire clan was proclaimed criminals, then I was too.

I'm being hunted.

"So... The Hiiragi Clan and the K-Kujou Clan..." I tried to speak, but nothing came out of my mouth afterwards.

"Yeah, they're all gone. Your clans are done. Tri-Commission? More like Kamisato Clan. That's all that's left. They're still trusted by the NFI, and I'm in close contact with Ayato to make sure nothing goes to shit. But considering this shitshow, I'm not sure..."

"They're looking for me... They're gonna kill me..." I said in fear. They're gonna kill me like they killed my brother.

"That's why I'm packing." Kokomi carried her bags. "I'm getting the fuck out of here and back to Watatsumi Island. The NFI still trusts me, and me staying here ensures they might find out I'm your leader. If you have a brain, follow me."

I stood for an uncomfortable amount of time, just staring at her. Knowing that in under 60 minutes everything changed for the worst, my life has changed and my life has never been in more danger ever.

My thoughts are clouded with my brother's. The past and an image of what his final moments looked like. I started thinking how to address this to our other brother, and how distraught he'd be. For a few seconds before my clan was gone, I was technically its leader since Kamaji was gone. And what was I doing? I was walking.

...I wiped away my tears and grabbed my bow and the rest of my stuff.

"Atta girl." Kokomi said as she opened the secret exit from the basement. "Come on, we're out of here."

And began our journey to leave Narukumi Island and to Watatsumi Island. The NFI hunting us down, and the grief in my heart weighing me down each step.

I am sorry, Kamaji. I let mom down, I didn't look after you.

...

Yoimiya POV

So, I was wrong. There were indeed people inside the Outlander Affairs Agency. Masked people. Purgers. And they've unleashed their wrath upon us.

We're 6 people against 10. We were outnumbered. And it's strange, because they immediately targeted Eren and Historia. Almost as if they knew they were the most dangerous ones. They knocked both of them unconscious, and we were screwed.

Me, Kazuha, Ena, and Emiko fought as hard as we could while hiding behind a fallen table. Gunshots was the star of the show. These people tried all sorts of things to kill us. Shoot us, stab us, throw us off the building. Kazuha never gave up, but he was getting more than fatigued. Me and the others just kept shooting. Ena and Emiko were barely hitting anyone due to the panic, while I was hitting a bullseye each time.

And it's funny, because 10 enemies became 15. Each time I think I decreased our targets, more come out from the darkness. Are they hiding in the floor below? How many are there? And why are they so insistent in killing Eren and Historia?

We've had to protect their unconscious bodies the entire time. Healing their injuries, making sure they don't get shot.

"AH!" Ena screamed. I looked and saw her arm spouting blood everywhere. It was shot. She fell to the floor and was screaming in pain. Sometimes, her cries were louder than the gunshots.

I need to help her, but the purgers don't stop coming. Everytime one is killed, double come out of the darkness. They're never ending. At this rate, she's going to bleed out, but we're going to be killed if one of us even stops shooting. And Kazuha. Kazuha is still using his sword, and yet he is so slow now, so exhausted and tired of fighting. There are so many close calls of him being shot, and parts of his hair were shot off and so were his clothes, but he wasn't injured yet. But each slash showed major tiredness, slow and imprecise, one could argue he wouldn't hit anything after all. His grunts and moans of exhaustion were clearer than ice. At this rate, he's going to die.

As I'm shooting, I'm using one of my legs to shake Eren and Historia. We need them more than anything. We can't do this. We can't. We're going to die. We're going to die in this tower, on this floor I destroyed hours ago, surrounded by burnt paperwork.

Before I knew it, Ena passed out from the pain. Emiko screamed as he shot every bullet he had, and then he had none. He hid behind the table and looked frantically for any ammunition, only to find nothing. At that point, he got desperate. He violently shook Eren and Historia while crying.

I kept shooting with all my might. Everything was hanging in the balance of me. It was up to me, and there's nothing I can do because the fucking purgers won't stop increasing in numbers. They may as well have an entire army wherever they come from in this building. If I don't do everything I can, we're all going to die.

I ran out of bullets, and the tears from fear fell from my eyes. And my heart skipped a beat when Kazuha was shot in the leg. Kazuha slid himself all the way to us, behind the table. He was in sharp agonizing pain, and I had no choice but to treat his wound. If he stayed like this longer, then his leg wouldn't work anymore. I couldn't do that to him. I need him. I need him to fight. I started performing surgery on his wound.

But I stopped when the purgers lurked over us. No one was shooting anymore, so they had no obstacle.

Us, six lowly people against...maybe fifty. I don't know anymore. They're too many. But they're all pointing guns at us, and I wished for a quick death.

"Hey." One of them said. "That ring looks expensive." They pointed to the ring Eren was wearing. It did look weirdly fancy. "Think we can sell it?"

"Why not, they're going to be dead anyway."

They knocked all of us out of the way and started robbing Eren and Historia. We tried to stop them, but they held a gun to our heads, even Ena, who was unconscious.

"Lovely ring. Although it seems to contain something weird. Looks like dirt." The man said as he began to steal the ring from Eren's finger.

And by sheer coincidence, I saw Eren's eyes open.

He saw what was happening. And...

...

Gamebang POV

As soon as we entered Heaven, we were greeted with a battle between angels, mortals, fought with swords and snakes. Led by... Barney and... Walter White? Other than that, Paradise was being destroyed the same way Inferno was. The entire place smelled of Wildfire.

As me and Collei traversed amidst the chaos between these two sides, Collei was trying to run back to Purgatory to finish what she started. I didn't let her, I held her tight as if she was Alizeh. I wasn't going to let go, I wasn't going to let her do something she'll regret. I wasn't going to let her be consumed by the Archon Residue.

I ran away from the battlefield and entered a realm of green fire. I ran across the chaos and explosions while making sure I didn't let go of Collei. She wouldn't use her powers on me, she wouldn't hurt me that way. Unless she succumbs to the Archon Residue.

VRAAAUUMMM!! Everywhere, explosions, and my ears would go deaf each time. Smoke covered my visions, and I had to seriously look at where I was running. Chaos everywhere, and people were getting burnt everywhere. Monuments, buildings, literal geographical structures, destroyed and burnt to black. Heaven is falling down.

"LET GO OF ME!" Collei screamed. "I WILL BURN THEM ALL!"

"Trust me, you don't wanna do that." I said, and I held her tighter than before.

Before I knew it, I left the 1st sphere and entered the 2nd. It was no different. Gold turned to black dust, and no Wildfire stopped burning.

The same was said for the 3rd, the 4th, the 5th, the 6th, and the 7th. I don't know what I was doing, I was just running and running, making sure we were far away from the entrance of Purgatory. From this point, I didn't know what to do. I don't know how to stop Collei, or how to stop...all of this. Is it safe to say the afterlife is doomed? Is it inevitable for it to burn to dust? Will Heaven and Hell truly be destroyed? Will I be destroyed alongside it? I'm dead, aren't I?

Oh god... For the first time in my life, I have no idea what to do.

I remember all the different times in my life that involved high stakes. The end of femboys, even as I thought all hope was lost, Venti convinced me to keep moving, and then I thought of a solution. Oh god... Venti... I am sorry...

The day Astolfo took the world. Even as we were in Celestia, I took arms and told everyone what to do when the army of hilichurls came to us. I knew what to do because I still had hope.

The day Alizeh stole the time machine and Cthulu rose. Jesus... We were all thinking of all sorts of plans to take them down. And while they all failed, we knew what to do...

And... The Collapse of Time... It was such a simple answer that I couldn't help but know what to do. Love. That's all I needed to do...

But here...? No one's here to give me some sappy motivational speech. None of my friends from Polandball are here. Oh my god... I just realized... As long as we were all together, we could do anything. And now, we're not. And look... It's all falling apart. I need them... I need my friends.

"BURN THEM!" Collei screamed. "BURN THEM ALL!"

I don't know what to do. This is hopeless. I don't know, I just don't know...

Is this all I can do? Hold her down like some animal? What is this cruel reality? Hold her tight and embrace the Wildfire? Is that it?

"HELP! SOMEBODY HELP!" I yelled out for anyone, anything. Please. "HELP! HELP!" Anyone, please, I can't do this alone... I never could... I could only get this far in my life because of others. Please...

"AGH!" Collei's body shone purple, and her skin burnt mine. I let her go from the instinct of pain. Shit. Shit shit shit...

She rose from my grasp, and stood burning violet. The ground around her burnt with the color of amethyst, and I stayed away to not die again.

And then, she began to walk away.

"NO!" I ran after her, but when I touched the purple flame on the ground, it hurt more than anything. I needed to go around it. But as I ran, the lilac flames only rose higher, like it was rejecting me from her. No. No God no, not like this.

"Huh-" Collei said as she was suddenly hit with some kind of fabric grenade that exploded some kind of liquid. Collei managed to dodge most of it, except her hand. It began to burn her skin and it was trying to burn her entire body. In anger, she used her powers. Suddenly, her flames became hotter. She managed to stop the burning on her skin, and even heal the damage. Thanks to her cursed powers of course.

But then, lightning came from above and struck her to the ground. The magnetized flames weakened, and I could walk to her side now, even if the fire still hurts my feet. In her injured state, I came and held her tight once again. It would be awhile before she regains her strength to defy me, so I needed to think of something quick.

"You okay?" The one who summoned the lightning asked. She was tall and resembled the Electro Archon.

"Y-Yeah..." I responded. The woman seemed to have a whole group behind me.

Some of the group I recognized instantly. Martin Luther King Jr, Tolkien, and- OH MY GOD. "JAIME LANNISTER!?" I shouted in excitement.

"You know me?" He said as his golden hair flowed amidst the green smoke of Wildfire.

"You are literally my favorite game of thrones character holy shit I always wanted to meet you can you sign my chest-" I had to contain myself, there's more important things at hand. "Sorry... Uh, can yall help me out here?"

"What's the situation, because I seriously didn't like that purple fire." A girl came by and said. Her eyes had a spark, and it seemed she donned the style of a dancer.

"Uh once upon a time she got cancer and then she was taken in-"

"Short version!" MLK urged.

"She has evil demons inside her that are turning her evil and she's going to kill alot of people if she gets into Purgatory!"

"Well it's good that you came here to the 7th." Jaime said. "But it seems she is still active."

"Please, help me." I begged of them. "I want to send her back to her home. I care about her. I can't let her make the same mistakes I did. Please, for the lives of millions, help me help her."

Jaime looked determined to assist me, until something caught his attention from above, something flying.

"Aladiel..." Jaime said. He looked troubled for a moment. "How high stakes is this girl?" He asked me.

"She's going to burn the entirety of Purgatory if she gets her way."

"Shit..." Jaime bent down and just remained in stressed thought. MLK went beside him as if he knew what was going on inside his head.

"You have a choice, Jaime." MLK said. "Kill your sister or save millions of lives."

"If my sister lives... More will die."

"Think about this, Jaime."

Jaime slapped himself multiple times and thought for a while, until he stood up.

"Makoto, Ai, Sucrose, handle this. Makoto is an archon, she can still provide archon energy for the bombs. And stay with the green girl and her dad."

Uh I had to correct them. "I'm not her dad-"

"MLK, Guizhong, come with me. We're going to kill my sister. And I'm going to keep Tolkien safe." And thus, those people left us to go on their own journey.

"Sucrose..." Collei faintly said. I looked at her and the corruption within was seriously taking its toll. Her eyes were full on purple at this point.

"Is..." A petite green haired woman with animal ears and glasses. And somehow, she looked familiar to me. "Is that Collei?"

"Do you know her?" I asked.

"Yeah... I... I was her friend." She walked closer to Collei's weak body.

Collei looked at this girl, and suddenly the purple in her eyes slowly disappeared, and she looked normal again. Like the person I knew.

"Sucrose..." Collei said faintly.

"Y-Yeah!" She bent down to be closer to Collei. "It's me."

"You're... You're here..."

"Y-Yes..."

"You were dead..."

"I uh...still am."

Collei held out her hand and tried to reach out to her. She held Collei's hand.

"I missed you..." Collei said.

"I missed all of you too." She responded.

"I'm sorry..." Collei said. "For what happened to you... With Alizeh... I couldn't be there when you needed me-"

"Shh-Shh..." She told Collei. "I've...had lots of time to reflect on how I died. And...I had to do alot of work to get over what happened. It wasn't easy."

"How can you stay happy after the way you died...?"

Sucrose smiled. "I remembered you. Your story served as a reminder that it can get better. The story of a girl who went through relentless torture, and at the end of it all she came out a loving and caring person. You, by being yourself, saved me. It is why I was able to truly rest in peace after what happened."

Collei smiled before tears fell from her eyes. "Wow..." She had a weak chuckle.

"Sucrose." I spoke. I had to get this off my chest. "My daughter was Alizeh. Whatever she did to you, I am truly sorry. If there's anything I could do to make it up to you, then I'll do it."

"But... You didn't even do anything." Sucrose told me.

"Even so, let me repay my daughter's sins."

"Well... What can you do for me?" Sucrose wondered. "You can...keep taking care of Collei here."

I couldn't help but smile at that. "Will do-"

VRAUUUMMMM!! Wildfire exploded behind me, interrupted our talk. And just like that, Collei suddenly remembered where she was, and her eyes grew purple once again. She used her powers and radiated her body with it, my grip on her hurt like glass cutting your skin and I had to instinctively let go of her. Sucrose was confused but realized the danger that was about to happen, she backed away to protect herself.

"Ai!" She called. "Handkerchiefs! Makoto! Come here!"

The girl in the style of a dancer named Ai came to Sucrose with tons of Handkerchiefs. Makoto went beside Sucrose to emit her archon energy to Sucrose's potions. But Makoto held her weapon ready in her other hand, prepared to strike down Collei, who had begun to walk again.

I couldn't do anything. Her flames rose up to a hundred again, and it hurt more than ever to feel. I still chased after her, but there was nothing I could do.

Collei was starting to walk a little too far, and Makoto noticed. She used her weapon and struck more lightning from above. Collei noticed this time and used her powers to block the thunder. But then somehow, her dark purple shield she made above her head was consuming the thunder.

She looked at Makoto, furious that she would try something like that. She aimed her hands at her, and struck the lightning back to Makoto, her own attack. Makoto managed to dodge it, but it meant she couldn't help Sucrose and Ai anymore. She had to fight, because Collei was actually throwing hands now. She was that mad.

"Burn them..." Collei said in pure fury. "BURN THEM ALL!" From her back was summoned a large flame that resembled a snake. It charged towards Makoto, she had to move out of the way to make sure it didn't hit the others. Makoto fired electricity against the snake, but her attack was immediately destroyed into particles by Collei's demon.

"AH!" The snake caught up and bit her entire body before disappearing. Makoto fell to the ground, her skin burnt and bleeding.

"MAKOTO!" Ai yelled before noticing the ground slowly burning, the flames making their way to her. She ran away as fast she could. She threw the last of her handkerchiefs against the fire in some desperate attempt to stop it, but it only made the flame rise higher.

Eventually, the fires caught up to her and she was consumed. The flame disappeared shortly, and Ai laid on the ground defeated. She had no strength to stand, yet she still breathes.

"OH MY GOD!" Sucrose yelled before she noticed Collei walked closer to her, flame in hand. Sucrose backed away, but Collei approached faster. Sucrose did everything, she threw the last of those cloth grenades at Collei, but they were all blocked and did nothing.

Then, flame surrounded Sucrose, and she had nowhere to go.

Collei embraced the fires inside her neck and let it consume her, empty her of all light and fill her with darkness. A corruption that made her seek blood. The demons had taken hold of her, and they weren't letting go anytime soon. She smiled as she saw Sucrose's fear, her eyes lusted for violence. Her laugh seemed unholy, and it simply wasn't her.

Collei took her bow and arrow from her back and aimed it at Sucrose.

"NO!" Suddenly, I had flashbacks to Alizeh. I couldn't stop Alizeh from corrupting herself, but I wasn't going to let Collei do the same thing, not to the same person my daughter hurt.

And I didn't care anymore, I jumped into those flaming walls even if it hurt my entire being like a million rusted stab wounds. I jumped in and tackled Collei away from Sucrose, and I knew where I was taking her while I had her in my arms.

To the next door, to the next sphere of Heaven. Somewhere far from here. I needed her far away from the others. Far away from everything. But not me, I'll stay with her as long as it takes.

I pushed us through the door, and entered the 8th Sphere of Heaven, The Fixed Stars. Faith, Hope, and Love.

We land on a cloud that contains the ladder that leads to the entrance of the 9th. Around us, the souls in this sphere are running everywhere to avoid the Wildfire. Even the giant ladder itself is a little broken, and I wouldn't trust it.

Collei uses her powers once again and escapes from my grasp. I back away as I am getting the sense that she's really fuckin pissed now.

"YOU!" Collei screamed in demonic harmony. "DON'T YOU GET IT! I MUST BURN THEM. BURN THEM ALL!" Suddenly, she's got her giant snake aimed towards me.

Oh god no.

The snake lunges towards me, and I look everywhere for some kind of defense.

"Ūṣē ṛṭ." A voice in my head called. A familiar voice. *"Ūṣē wḥaṭ wāṣ ḡīverṇ tə yōū."*

I know this voice, I heard it when I picked up the Flaming Sword.

Oh shit, the Flaming Sword! I kept it in my pants the whole time! Shit!

"ARGH!" I pulled the sword out, it shone in the light of the stars and burnt regular flame, yet divine.

The snake got close, and I slashed its entire head off before it disappeared into the air. The heat of the snake was painful, but then the fire of the sword kept me warm.

I cough and spit out blood onto the cloudy floors of this sphere. The smoke coming from the Flaming Sword erases the smoke from the Wildfire all around us, showing me a clear path to Collei, who stands consumed by hatred.

"Collei..." I said as I pointed the sword at her. "I don't wanna do this."

"No talking. You already know the drill." She took hold of the ladder and ripped out a piece, a rod to use as a weapon against me. She infused it with her own powers.

And it's funny, what she said. It's what Alizeh said.

"Have it your way, Collei." I said as I prepared for battle. "But I'm gonna save you if it's the last thing I do."

"AGH!" She charged towards me with her weapon, and it clashed with my sword. I could feel the sword giving me immense physical strength I've never had before. On one slash against her little rod, I hit it hard enough that it fell out of her hand.

She didn't scare, she sent another snake to me. A smaller one, but deadly nonetheless. I sliced it in half as it got to me. Then, she sent another snake, and I did the same. And another, another, and another until she swiftly set the ground on purple fire and let it run towards me.

I tilt the sword and bashed it onto the ground, turning the burning clouds she made for me into my own weapon. I watched as purple turned into yellow and charged towards Collei. She panicked and tried shielding herself again, but the sword's power destroyed her defenses and it shattered it into pieces. She flinched at the damage done.

I ran to her and used the sword to send flares of fire to her way. She dodged each of them while shooting her own flares at me. As I got closer, I increased the amount of sent her.

Collei proceeded to give me a handful of large flaming snakes to deal with. I stopped running and stood to slice each of them in half. Each kill, the snakes screamed in agony. And after I killed all of them, the Wildfire only increased in intensity until it was all we could hear.

I continued to run to her, I threw fires at her that she dodged or blocked with shields. She set the ground on fire again, and I simply shoved the sword onto the ground again to send my own flame to her, which she dodged this time.

Collei used her powers to destroy the ladder before us. She created a shield for herself so that the falling pieces wouldn't hurt her. Some of these broken ladder parts were burning with Wildfire.

The souls of this sphere watched as I was barely able to dodge everything that fell before me. My skin was sliced by these parts, and burnt by the green fire. And yet, I dodged most of it, thanks to the sword. I broke pieces that got near me, I moved out of the way, and I kept running to Collei.

But then, an arrow pierced my shoulder. A stabbing pain infected me, and I quickly shoved it out of my shoulder. The arrow was infused with dendro and the Archon Residue. Collei was shooting arrows at me while inside her protective cage.

I caught most of them and let the other arrows slip past me. And I just kept running to slice her out of that little cage she made for herself.

But yet, she looked...afraid?

"This...suffocating space is my harbor..." Collei said as she tried to breathe. Was she claustrophobic? "No one here can...hurt me." She wallowed up into a ball and covered her face. Safe from the dangers outside of that cage, and yet she is not free, but that is of her own doing.

And I got closer and closer to her. I could slice her out of there and be done with it, but... She's afraid. What am I doing...?

I... I sheathed my sword back into my pants and reached out to her. I know that touching the flame wall that surrounds will hurt me, her fires hurt more than most. And...and yet I have to.

"It doesn't matter what's out there..." Collei said.

But as soon as the slightest piece of my finger touched the fires around her, she knew and felt my presence there.

In pure fear and desperation, she lunged at me and punched my face. She left her cage, and was more controlled by the corruption than ever, thanks to fear. She wasn't thinking anymore.

But not anymore would I fight her. Not anymore would I use my sword against her. No, I know better now. This isn't how I want it to go.

Collei punched me again in the chest and I was pushed back. I tried blocking her, but the power of adrenaline and terror surpass any defense. Her punches were of a child's cries, alarmed and confused yet powerful to the one being punched, because they care. And she kept physically attacking me until blood came out my nose and mouth. But she didn't look so good either, as everything that had happened left her dirty and full of cuts. Her eyes had bags under them, and they were still purple. Her hands were red, and some parts of her clothes were gone and replaced with blood.

And I have to remember, she came here for me. I can't help but feel like I am to blame.

She kept attacking me and attacking me and I still wouldn't fight back, even if it killed me.

For one last desperate attempt from me, I tackled her once again, even in my very weak state. I attempted to keep her in my arms again, I attempted to let her simply look up at the Fixed Stars.

And yet I was too weak. As soon as we were both on the ground, hurt beyond comprehension, dirtier than men in war, she found the strength to tower over me. I laid there, helpless.

She was above me, making the noise of a wild animal. She swiftly grabbed an arrow she shot at me earlier from the ground and held it at my neck.

...

...

...

"Collei..." Gamebang spoke to her. "It's me... Your tutor..."

Collei still held the arrow at his neck, unchanging.

"Come on... You know me." Gamebang spoke softly. "Like you know Master Tighnari and Cyno. Sucrose and Izerak. Amber..."

Collei's expression changed to utter confusion as he stated those names. The ones that mattered to her.

"They're waiting for us, Collei..." Gamebang told her. "Our friends... On Avidya Forest, on Monstadt. It's gonna be Ludi Harpastum soon... Amber... I... Izerak is also there. And..."

Collei's face turned from baffled to a mixed emotion of wonderment and despair. To think of how happy those times could be, and yet she's here. Flaming purple tears fell out of her eyes and onto Gamebang's chest.

Gamebang slowly and steadily placed his hand over her cheek. "It's gonna be okay..." He reassured her. "I'm here with you..."

Collei's eyes turned back to normal, the Archon Residue was gone for now. And all that was left was this crying mess of a person.

She let go of the arrow, it landed beside Gamebang's bloody face.

Collei went away from Gamebang and beside him, wallowing into a ball once again. Sobbing harder than she ever had before.

"I-I'm sorry..." She cried to Gamebang. "I am so so sorry..."

Gamebang sat up even though it hurt to move. He sat beside Collei and patted her back as she cried.

"All I wanted w-was...to save you..." Collei said. "From h-here... I just wanted to protect you..."

"I understand." Gamebang replied. He would've done the same for Alizeh.

"I didn't think about what would happen if I let my n-neck..." Collei struggled to speak amidst her sorrows. "I didn't think about it... I just..."

Gamebang understood. "You were desperate for anything to get me back."

"And that deal I made w-with Azazel..." Collei cried louder.

"The things we do for love." Gamebang said. "But it's okay, you're you again, see? And I'm here too. And I have something to protect us with." Gamebang touched the sword he had.

Collei laid in silence for a while. Gamebang simply let her let go of all her sorrows right here.

"You know, Collei..." Gamebang spoke. "The world is a cruel place. Darkness covers the land and men shiver in fear over men. And what can we do about it? What can we do?"

...

"What can we do?"

Obama laid beside Michael's dead body, having not slept in over 22 hours just to make sure he does not sleep away from the time Michael should be brought back. He's willing to do anything to make sure his friend survives. Even as his life is at risk, he'll stay awake longer just for Michael.

"The truth is, Collei, people do what they do because of love. Good or bad, it all connects back to our connections with others."

Morbius paints the edge of the ship red with the blood of Nobushi men. Revenge for Gwen. He has no mercy, he has lost it all. And close to him is Ei, who fights with all her might because she has someone she needs to save. She has a home to return to, and she'll do anything to save it. To save her. Thunder strikes harder when it's for the ones you care for.

"The world is full of love, and love is suffering."

[Insert GenshinPlace member] walks by the house he had given Com in Atlantis. Oh how empty it is without him. They can't help but feel if they tried a bit harder and been a little nicer, he would still be here. All that's left of him are pictures. They regret that their care simply wasn't enough for Com. They did care, they cared more than anyone will know.

"But...suffering is love, Collei. We endure suffering for the people we love. We do anything for them. And that's not a bad feeling to have. A man who loves is dangerous, for they have something to lose. Fear them, they fight harder than anyone."

Eren arose from his slumber as he felt his ring stolen from him by the purgers. The ring that contained the ashes of an old friend, one he treasured very much. It's almost as if all his previous suffering didn't happen, for Eren began to fight immediately. And fight he did furiously, the strength of a million men reigned in him as he fought the purgers and killed multiple all at once. All for that ring, and the man who held it feared Eren Yeager, who was covered in blood and guts, and his aura was something entirely different.

"Sometimes... Things are more complicated than you think. But...sometimes all it takes is love. Sometimes, that's all someone needs to see the light in this world. And it doesn't really matter if suffering passes every night, as long as we have each other. Hold on to that, Collei. Hold on to hope."

Com held on tight to Haruhi's large divine form. Above him was Michael. Both were climbing her body as she fought Lucifer. If they can reach her personally, then maybe there is hope for the afterlife. But Michael's hand slipped and he fell down, but then he was caught by Com. He saved his life. Com helped Michael get back on the climb. Haruhi fights with all her might, and it is hard to hold on to her and rise higher, but they will keep climbing. They will keep hoping.

"Hold the people around you tight, Collei. We're all here together, and I'll be here with you in every step of the way. Don't give up, despite what happens or what is happening. Do it for the ones you care for."

Kokomi swiftly rowed their boat to Kannazuka, and hopefully Watatsumi Island. Kujou Sara watched as Narukami Island faded in the distance. The night sky shining upon the waters was all that was left. She had lost everything she had on that island, but she didn't give up just yet. No, it was impossible for her to even give in to despair. She had no idea what to do, but all she knows is that she has to keep fighting. For the ones that matter to her.

"Collei... Even though I would've advised against it, I am happy you came for me. Thank you... I am glad to be here with you. And for you, I'm going to do everything in my power to get you back home. To protect you, to bring you safety, this I swear for you, not as your tutor, but as your dear friend. This is an oath."

Jaime climbs the steps of the Emyrean to find Aladiel and Cersei. Alongside him is Guizhong, MLK and Tolkien. For the innocent, Jaime will do anything to prevent more lives being taken. He swore an oath to protect the innocent, and he wasn't going to betray it. He loved Cersei, but not anymore, for it only brought him pain. Now, he will end the pain she brings upon others, for he loves someone anew. Himself.

"So..."

Gamebang stood up and held out his hand for Collei, who looked at it.

"Fight with me, Collei. For the good of this world and for the ones that matter to us. It is a love worth fighting for. To see our friends again, come with me, and I won't let go of you."

Collei stared at Gamebang for a while. The Wildfire around them kept blowing up like endless fireworks. The cloudy ground beneath them was black as ashes. Rubble of broken things surrounded them. The smoke of flame filled their senses. And yet, despite all this, the shining souls of the 8th sparkled beauty in this damned place. There is light in chaos, there is a shining hope for it all at the end. You will always find a heart in darkness, it is inevitable. All you have to do is look around.

And for Collei, the one who shone the brightest was not some warrior of the faith or God himself or an Angel. It was simply her tutor, who helped her read and write.

And thus, Collei rose from her sorrows and took Gamebang's hand.

...

Yoimiya POV

Hour 10

Eren, using nothing but his bare hands, ripped the heads of purgers off their necks. Many shot bullets at him, but he was faster than wind and wild as lion. Sometimes, he caught the bullet, and blood seeped from his hand and to the floor, but all we wanted to was to cover the purgers in his fury, a mark of his for them to remember.

He shoved his hand through someone's head, he punched a purger in the face so hard their eyes popped out, he kicked a man in the testicles and blood exploded from their pants, he threw a guy off the building and watched as their body splattered below, he scraped someone's face on the hard spiky broken walls of this room like they were a paint brush, he took an enemy's shotgun and stabbed it through someone's chest instead of actually shooting it, and then he ripped the gun out and shot someone in the arm multiple times until it revealed bone and fell off, and he ripped out the bone itself and stabbed multiple people with it. Eren was on a rampage.

At this point, many of the purgers began to run away, but Eren knew that one of them had his ring. He chased after them in all fours in the speed of a cheetah. Before they could even go downstairs, Eren already killed them. No one was leaving.

Eren tackled someone to the ground and quite literally bit their forehead and ripped the flesh off of their face, including the mask they wore. Someone started shooting Eren again and they shot through his hand, but it seemed he felt no pain, for he used the blood from that gunshot and threw it at his enemies in the eye to blind them, and then he charged at them and ripped them all to shreds.

"WHERE IS HE!" Eren sounded like a demon. "WHERE IS LU!"

"This ring?" Someone said behind him. Eren, in his blood and tears covered clothes, looked at the man holding his beloved ring.

"I... I know him." Emiko pointed out the man who held the ring. "That's... that's Danger."

Suddenly, I remembered what those two people said during the early hours of the experiment, of a man murdering randomly in the streets. And it seems this is him, wearing a mask that resembles a snake, holding a sword.

And I felt fear. Not of Danger, but for Danger. Eren was beyond violent.

"All of you have disappointed me." Danger said to the cowering purgers. "Sometimes you just have to do it yourself." He pointed his sword at Eren.

Eren stood up and immediately sprinted towards Danger. Screaming pure madness at him.

Danger prepared his battle stance, and then he lunged his sword at Eren as he got closer.

Eren took hold of his blade, even if it cut the skin of his hand, he tilted violently and broke the damn sword in half. Danger was caught off guard and backed off, but then Eren slashed the broken blade at him, he tried blocking with what was left of the sword. But Eren's hit was powerful enough to make him let go of the sword.

Danger stood, weaponless. Eren then let go of his broken blade and let it fall to the floor.

And then he tackled Danger and started fucking eating him alive. Rips of flesh and bone, screams of agony and the sound of a wild hungry dog. Eren was eating so violently that all of us started getting a little bit of blood on us. Some of the purgers threw up at this disgusting sight. Strings of red covered Eren like disorganized cords of a CPU, or like a puppet that wasn't taken care of properly, or even a broken slinky. I don't know, I was busy puking at the sight of this.

For a moment as he ate him in the darkness, Eren didn't resemble man. He could've been some animal.

When Eren was done, all that was left was a mess of organs and mush. He arose from his meal, his ring in hand. He yelled out into the night in total victory.

It was at this moment, Historia woke up from her slumber. "Eren...?"

Eren looked outside of the building. "The sun is starting to arrive." He said as he wore the ring once again.

All of the purgers eventually ran away and left us alone. I resorted to treating everyone's wounds, including Eren's.

"Well... I guess we're waiting out the entire experiment here." I said.

Here, surrounded by mauled corpses. But we're safe now. All we have to do is wait out the remaining 2 hours.

...

Com Insydeme POV

I remember a time...

I lashed out at everyone because I was losing my fame. I drove my family away, my friends, my fans, and I had nothing. It was then she approached me, Alizeh...

She offered me everything I ever dreamed of. All the fame, all the money, everything. All I had to do was follow her orders.

Desperate to have the period of my life where I had everything again, I obliged to her demands. I went into the kingdom of Atlantis and kidnapped various important political figures there and hid inside the sunken titanic. I sat there for a long while as my hostages begged me for mercy. I covered my ears to drown out their cries. I started to think, everyone was after me now because of this, and I began to regret this. Why did I do this? I begged the gods to stop their begging. I never thought I'd see myself as a villain.

Then, Michael came along to rescue them from me, and in turn, he tried to save me. He convinced me to go on the path of redemption. He told me to come with him and stop whatever Alizeh was doing. Michael's words touched me.

Michael Jackson was an old friend I lost contact with, an artist I collaborated with once. And he didn't see a villain right as he saw me on the titanic, he tried to see the good in me and tried to bring it out. How could I not accept?

But... But then, Alizeh began to win the battle against Cthulu. Suddenly, the lust for greed within me arose. I switched to what I thought was the winning side, and I betrayed my dear friend. At that moment, they lost all faith in me. I consider that to be my greatest sin, betraying Michael.

And during the Collapse of Time, even as I was glitching everywhere, I landed in multiple alternate timelines where... I had everything. It was perfect... I was stunning...

But it wasn't truly me.

The Com Insydeme of another universe was a humble samaritan, and I wasn't that... They're me, but they're not at the same time. I will never be like them, I thought. So what's the point?

Depressed, I traveled back to my home universe. This place.

And in the Space Between Timelines, I saw millions of universes glitching, being destroyed. Those are zillions of lives being taken away.

I can't help but think of my contribution to Alizeh's plan. If I didn't kidnap those politicians, PolandBall would've found and stopped Alizeh sooner. If I didn't betray Michael, they could've found a way down to the Challenger Deep. If I didn't do everything I did, there would be entire realities that would still be alive.

Or would it? The multiverse didn't even exist prior to the Collapse of Time. Oh god, I contributed to a cycle of suffering throughout an extension of the universe. Worlds were created to purely suffer and be destroyed, and on and on it would continue like that. I helped create a living hell in all of existence. Because of me, an infinite amount of lives are gone. Because of me, people suffered fates worse than death.

I threw up.

Thankfully, Michael and his friends managed to stop Alizeh and save the newly made multiverse. Everything was larger now, but it was mostly back to normal. Back to the same world that disappointed me, the one I tried changing.

I couldn't bear the guilt, and so I hid underwater. For a whole year, I remained in shame, wallowing in isolation and sadness.

Then... [Insert GenshinPlace member] found me and presented me before the throne of Atlantis.

They could've executed me, cut off my manhood, done the worst punishments known to man to me. And...they did the same thing Michael once did to me. They offered me the chance to change.

I was eternally grateful to [Insert GenshinPlace member] and Aqua. Yet, I felt that I didn't deserve redemption... Why should I deserve it? I killed trillions, no, more than that.

Yet, at their kindness, I tried to be better.

And...

One night, I was living a normal mundane life, different from my life of fame. Traveling the streets of Atlantis and buying groceries and eating food. Then, at the end of the day, I entered a local bar, and I drank. Then, I made some friends while drinking. We talked lots about topics I was interested in, topics I forgot I had passions for. Old TV shows and movies, art, music composition, all that stuff.

I left the bar with these people and to a karaoke. We sang our drunk hearts out. I sang too. And...it was the most fun I've ever had in my life. I was happy...

For the first time in a year, I haven't thought about the things I did or my past. I was here, in the present.

But I didn't deserve this happiness. The corpses of my victims floated in the Court of Azathoth, while I laid here drinking beer. Being happy feels wrong, I can't be happy, not after what I did. And yet I was, and I felt it wrong. I didn't deserve this. I didn't want to deserve this.

I went back home and cried my eyes out.

Then... [Insert GenshinPlace member] told me that they were going to Hell. And...me, desperate to deserve the happiness I felt, begged them to take me with them.

To answer for my sins at Purgatory and finally be redeemed. To be cleansed in the eyes of the divine.

After many begging, they took me with them.

Then, we met Collei. When they needed me most, I protected them. It felt good to help another person instead of hurting them like I always did. And I truly did my best to guard her.

But...when it was deemed unreasonable to continue on this journey, I rejected that notion. I didn't wanna go back to the world of the living, not until I can finally deserve that happiness I felt. I felt as if I wouldn't be able to ever be redeemed as long as I was in the living world. I needed Purgatorio, I felt. And so, for my own feelings of desperation and self hatred, I betrayed [Insert GenshinPlace member] and stayed in Hell.

I climbed the mountain of Purgatory with Collei, and I was genuinely hopeful that it was all going to be over soon. That my soul would be cleansed once and for all.

...Then Michael came along.

...I realized that the divine didn't matter. It doesn't matter if God forgives you, the people you hurt won't. As long as you seek the forgiveness of some higher power, you never seek the forgiveness of your actual

victims. And it wouldn't matter at all if my soul was cleansed, Michael hates me forever and ever for betraying him.

So why? What was it all for? I'm always going to be a villain. It doesn't matter anymore, I thought, so I might as well jump off the mountain...

But then, the war began at long last. For the first time since the Collapse of Time, I saw chaos. People dying, people suffering, people burning, all because of two giant people fighting amongst them. People were suffering, and here I was, wallowing in my own self pity and sorrow.

What the fuck was I doing...?

I was busy crying about me rather than doing whatever I can to help these people. How can I say that I don't wanna hurt others? Doing nothing is the same as letting someone die when you know you can do something about it.

And... I realized, I will never be able to revoke my past sins. And...that's okay. I should've stuck to what I was doing in Atlantis. I should've been focused on being better. Instead of being fixated on the hurt I've done, I should've focused on never hurting others again.

And... I knew what I had to do at that moment. For the sake of everyone not only in the afterlife, but the world.

I am not a hero, I am simply a man.

But... Michael, he's special.

So... For the sake of everything that is holy, even if I cannot be forgiven, that's okay. As long as I can protect the ones who truly protect others, then that is enough. That is all I can do, and I will achieve it to the highest degree.

Michael is the hero, and I will make sure he lives on to help others, the same way he did for me back then.

This is my requiem, my act of change. To ensure the future has a protector.

And so...

...

"We're almost there, Michael..." I held on to the divine form of God. Climbing this thing whilst it was frantically moving is the most intense thing I've ever experienced.

"It's all fucked..." Michael said in dismay. "Everything is going to shit... Nothing is going to survive this. Shit... Fuck... I can't save them..."

Oh fuck no, I am not letting him be like this. "Listen here, damn you." I said. "You do not give up on the people. You saved the goddamn multiverse, what is this compared to that? The person I know you are, you wouldn't give up so easily. You'd keep fighting until everything was safe. Keep fighting, Michael, for everyone."

"It's just..." Michael's head laid on the divine walls. "Why must it be me...?"

"Because no one in this universe is willing to go through the shit you go through." I stated. "These heavy burdens you carry, you lift them away from the people you protect. This universe needs you, Michael, and I know you care for the innocent."

Michael began to cry. "If only they were here... Obama, Eren, Gamebang... All of them. I wouldn't be crying if they were here."

"Well... Unfortunately, I'm all you got. So... Keep climbing this thing so you can have the chance to meet them again."

Michael, with hesitation yet determination, continued to climb. "For everyone... For all of them... Come on, me... Climb, damn you!"

There you go. That's Michael Jackson.

"AH SHIT!" Michael screamed. Both of us witnessed God punch Lucifer's entire head off, blasted into multiple giant pieces that fell on their armies. Were their soldiers even fighting at this point? Or were they simply trying to live?

The Devil screamed in pain, and God took hold of their beast form's neck, and God held tight.

Suddenly, the body of God's divine form began to warm up to the point of scorching hot. It hurt to touch, and both me and Michael couldn't help but let go. We fell off into oblivion and watched as God included the Devil into this large overheating.

Then- BOOM!! Both giant forms exploded into multiple broken pieces, and some were on fire. God destroyed both her and Lucifer's giant forms.

Lucifer, injured, came out of his destroyed form as his default teenage form, at first flying then falling.

Then, God flew to Lucifer personally, and punched them into fucking oblivion. Lucifer landed on the ground with the rest of their scared armies.

"HARUHI!" Michael screamed. "SHIT!-" He couldn't say much as we landed on a pool of corpses. Dead from the fighting of God and the Devil. Whatever quarrels the divine had, the innocent suffer for it. And here they were, in this tight space called Purgatorio, dead for the second time, and this time they wouldn't go anywhere. Their soul was gone.

The pool of dead bodies saved our fall. We watched as Lucifer arose from under the corpses, looking like a zombie close to dying. His head, almost half of it was gone and left with skull. And yet, he laughed. He fucking laughed.

Haruhi descended from the above and stood in front of Lucifer. In her eyes, only red fury remained.

"AGH!" She screamed as she punched Lucifer again. "ARGH!!" Lucifer wasn't even fighting back, he was enjoying this. "URGH!!" She broke his jaw. "UGHH!!" She ripped his ear off. "I HATE YOU!!" She screamed louder than the falling pieces of their forms. "I FUCKING HATE YOU!!"

"HAHAHAHAHAHAHAHA!!!!" Lucifer laughed and moaned in pleasure.

Michael and I looked around us. So many dead, yet many who were still here were suffering. Some were running for their lives, while many continued to battle in their pointless war. Angels were attacking the giant demonic hounds, and often did the hounds feast on people and even Angels. The hounds all look the same, like the one we battled with Collei back then.

Suddenly, an attack from behind. Michael suddenly flew into the air beside me, and crashed to the ground. I looked to see a hound behind us, it was the one that kicked Michael.

Michael, despite bleeding, charged to somehow attack the giant hound before him. Of course, all it did was kick him back again to the ground, more wounded than before.

"Michael!" I said as I went to his injured body.

He was screeching in pain. His whole body was shaking, and blood seeped in his forehead.

No, I couldn't let this be. He was not dying here, not today. Everyone needs him, and if he dies here, the world is doomed. It was up to me to protect him now, to repay the kindness I had betrayed of him. It didn't matter what I was doing, whether it was for redemption or anything, I had to protect Michael.

"Michael..." I looked at him. "What... What do we say to the God of death? Not today. It is not your day."

And then, I ran towards the giant dog. They tried chomping me into their mouths, but I knew better. I remembered how Collei managed to handle one, the eye. But I didn't have a dendro vision, but what I did have was a bow and arrow, taken by one of the dead Heaven soldiers on the ground. I only had 3 arrows, I had to make them count.

As I ran closer, I stopped and aimed. The hound only ran closer and closer. Focus, Com, you can do this. Come on, damn you! You can do this!

I shot my shot, and it hit one of the beast's eye. Fuck yeah! I blinded one eye, and now I have one more to hit. 2 arrows left. Come on, I can do this. For Michael.

I shot the second arrow, and while I did hit the hound, I hit his leg instead of his eye. Shit!

That may have slowed them down, but they were still charging for us.

The possibility of this giant dog catching up to us and eating us was horrifying to me now. The result of me failing.

I panicked, and I shot the arrow and completely missed. Shit. Shit shit shit. It was going to kill us brutally. It was going to eat us and rip us to shreds.

And then I looked at Michael, his pained expression laid upon me. I remembered. For everything... For all of it. I cannot sow, I cannot back down. I kept an oath.

It doesn't matter anymore. It doesn't matter.

Fear cuts deeper than swords. Fear the one who has something to lose. Fear me.

I ran towards the giant hound. It opened its mouth and revealed its stinking unholy breathe. It tried to bite me, to consume me, but I jumped on its head before it can do that. It tried shaking itself to get me off its face, but I held on tight. Everything was counting on this moment.

BAM! I blinded the dog with my own bare hands, blood blew everywhere on my body as I dug deep into its vision. I pulled on its ears to run away from Michael's location, and I jumped off and ran back to Michael.

"Hey. Hey hey hey. I'm back." I knelt down to Michael's level.

"Com..." Michael said faintly. "The... The..."

Somewhere behind the background, Haruhi was sadistically harming Lucifer. Both entirely covered in blood and bruises. Each punch from Haruhi would cause the ground to shake.

"It's okay, Michael..." I told him. "It's gonna be okay..."

Michael, with blood on his lips, smiled. I don't know what it meant, but it felt earned after everything I've done.

And then his smile turned to absolute horror as he saw something behind me.

I looked at what terrified him, and saw a tall man with black wings. A Fallen Angel.

"Com..." Michael called for me. "P-Please..."

"W-What?" I was confused.

"I- AGH!!" Michael's wounds consumed his being with pain.

I looked back to the Fallen Angel, he was smirking. And then, it held a sword and aimed it at me.

"AZAZEL!" Michael screamed.

So that's their name, huh.

"You want him?" I told Azazel. "You'll have to get through me."

The bitch laughed for a bit. "And who are you?" The Fallen Angel asked.

I took a spear from one of the dead bodies. "I am Com Insydeme, and that is all."

"Com..." Michael said.

I'm not going to back down anytime soon. I'm going to keep fighting.

For Michael... FOR MICHAEL!

"AAAHHHH!!!" I charged towards the Fallen Angel, spear in the air.

As I kept running, I remembered a time...

From the day I was born, to the day I graduated high school, to the day I rose to fame.

To the day I met Michael and we made a song together...

To the day I lost everything.

To the day I met Alizeh and committed the worst actions of my life.

To... What happened to everything. The day I betrayed Michael and let Alizeh win. A day I still regret.

To... The whole year I spent in guilt.

To the day [Insert GenshinPlace member] found me and offered me a chance to change.

To a full 23 hours ago, when I joined them on this adventure to the afterlife... Oh lord... [Insert GenshinPlace member] must be safe up there, in the world of the living. Oh how I did not treasure my time there longer...

To Collei... Ah, I wonder what she's doing now. I hope she's safe...

To meeting Michael again on that mountain, and then Gamebang. And when I swam in the Garden of Eden... And then the mountain was destroyed... And when I rescued Michael... And now I am here...

As I got closer and closer to the black winged man, I could only think of how my life was such a waste, indulging in sin and selfishness. But... Would I change it if I had the chance?

I don't think so... I wouldn't be the person defending Michael if I didn't do those things. Though, I wish for a different outcome, it still happened nonetheless, and it is my duty as a human being to make sense of it all and use those experiences to do good instead.

If I was me a few years ago, I wouldn't be fighting for Michael...

I'm glad to be doing that right now.

Ah... What is this strange feeling of peace? Even as I am heading into certain danger...

[Insert GenshinPlace member], I wish you nothing but gratitude. Thank you and Aqua too for giving me a place in your kingdom.

And... Michael Jackson... I... "I am sorry... And... Thank you..." I seemed to have whispered in slow motion. Everything was slow now, and...peaceful.

And then, I got close to Azazel and swung my spear. He dodged it.

And then drove his sword into my chest.

For a second, I felt a pinch. But then, I felt nothing.

As I fell to the ground, my sight fixated on Michael, who finally had the courage to stand up despite his injuries.

Ah... How I would've loved to go to a bar and drink with you, Michael... With [Insert GenshinPlace member] and the Atlantis Princess...

No, Michael, there is no need to cry. Not all tears are evil. What are you crying for? I'm right here.

I...

Is it...scary? No, I don't think so. I feel calm.

Ah... I feel sleepy...

I might as well close my eyes and wake up to my own bed. To see the sun shining under the sea. To get up and buy groceries.

Ah... That'd be great. To be just like everyone els-

100

101

102

103

104

105

106

107

108

109

110

111

112

113

114

115

116

117

118

119

120

121

122

123

124

125

126

127

128

129

130

131

132

133

134

135

136

137

138

139

140

141

142

143

144

145

146

147

148

149

150

151

152

153

154

155

156

157

158

159

160

161

162

163

164

165

166

167

168

169

170

171

172

173

174

175

176

177

178

179

180

181

182

183

184

185

186

187

188

189

190

191

192

193

194

195

196

197

198

199

200

201

202

203

204

205

206

207

208

209

210

211

212

213

214

215

216

217

218

219

220

221

222

223

224

225

226

227

228

229

230

231

232

233

234

235

236

237

238

239

240

241

242

243

244

245

246

247

248

249

250

251

252

253

254

255

256

257

258

259

260

261

262

263

264

265

266

267

268

269

270

271

272

273

274

275

276

277

278

279

280

281

282

283

284

285

286

287

288

289

290

291

292

293

294

295

296

297

298

299

300

301

302

303

304

305

306

307

308

309

310

311

312

313

314

315

316

317

318

319

320

321

322

323

324

325

326

327

328

329

330

331

332

333

334

335

336

337

338

339

340

341

342

343

344

345

346

347

348

349

350

351

352

353

354

355

356

357

358

359

360

361

362

363

364

365

366

367

368

369

370

371

372

373

374

375

376

377

378

379

380

381

382

383

384

385

386

387

388

389

390

391

392

393

394

395

396

397

398

399

400

401

402

403

404

405

406

407

408

409

410

411

412

413

414

415

416

417

418

419

420

421

422

423

424

425

426

427

428

429

430

431

432

433

434

435

436

437

438

439

440

441

442

443

444

445

446

447

448

449

450

451

452

453

454

455

456

457

458

459

460

461

462

463

464

465

466

467

468

469

470

471

472

473

474

475

476

477

478

479

480

481

482

483

484

485

486

487

488

489

490

491

492

493

494

495

496

497

498

499

500

501

502

503

504

505

506

507

508

509

510

511

512

513

514

515

516

517

518

519

520

521

522

523

524

525

526

527

528

529

530

531

532

533

534

535

536

537

538

539

540

541

542

543

544

545

546

547

548

549

550

551

552

553

554

555

556

557

558

559

560

561

562

563

564

565

566

567

568

569

570

571

572

573

574

575

576

577

578

579

580

581

582

583

584

585

586

587

588

589

590

591

592

593

594

595

596

597

598

599

600

601

602

603

604

605

606

607

608

609

610

611

612

613

614

615

616

617

618

619

620

621

622

623

624

625

626

627

628

629

630

631

632

633

634

635

636

637

638

639

640

641

642

643

644

645

646

647

648

649

650

651

652

653

654

655

656

657

658

659

660

661

662

663

664

665

666

667

668

669

670

671

672

673

674

675

676

677

678

679

680

681

682

683

684

685

686

687

688

689

690

691

692

693

694

695

696

697

698

699

700

701

702

703

704

705

706

707

708

709

710

711

712

713

714

715

716

717

718

719

720

721

722

723

724

725

726

727

728

729

730

731

732

733

734

735

736

737

738

739

740

741

742

743

744

745

746

747

748

749

750

751

752

753

754

755

756

757

758

759

760

761

762

763

764

765

766

767

768

769

770

771

772

773

774

775

776

777

778

779

780

781

782

783

784

785

786

787

788

789

790

791

792

793

794

795

796

797

798

799

800

801

802

803

804

805

806

807

808

809

810

811

812

813

814

815

816

817

818

819

820

821

822

823

824

825

826

827

828

829

830

831

832

833

834

835

836

837

838

839

840

841

842

843

844

845

846

847

848

849

850

851

852

853

854

855

856

857

858

859

860

861

862

863

864

865

866

867

868

869

870

871

872

873

874

875

876

877

878

879

880

881

882

883

884

885

886

887

888

889

890

891

892

893

894

895

896

897

898

899

900

901

902

903

904

905

906

907

908

909

910

911

912

913

914

915

916

917

918

919

920

921

922

923

924

925

926

927

928

929

930

931

932

933

934

935

936

937

938

939

940

941

942

943

944

945

946

947

948

949

950

951

952

953

954

955

956

957

958

959

960

961

962

963

964

965

966

967

968

969

970

971

972

973

974

975

976

977

978

979

980

981

982

983

984

985

986

987

988

989

990

991

992

993

994

995

996

997

998

999

1000

Michael POV

...

Com?

Oh...Oh my god. Oh god no. This...

I... I never... I didn't want... I didn't want this...

I...

Why did you do this, Com? Why...? Why fight...? Were you fighting for me...? No... That can't be, after everything I did. So... Why did you come for me? Why... Why did you head into this direction?

Com?

Please, tell me this is a dream.

Oh god...

"I'm sorry..." I said as I tried retaining my balance. I'm injured pretty well, but I need to keep movi- "AH!"

I fell down to my knees. The pain, it's too much. It consumes me like water, and drowns me in my sorrow.

Oh god... If he was fighting for me... Why...? Why, Com? I treated you like shit. Did that garden really change you? You never would've done this a year ago... Never. Did you... What were you doing all this time?

Did I... Did I actually think... That you were the same person from one year ago?

I'm... I'm not that different from the divine... From Haruhi and Lucifer...

My feelings are just mixed. His contribution to Alizeh compared to now. If we think ethically, he still shouldn't...he...I...

...Damn it all... Who gives a fuck at this point... He died for me. You don't need philosophy to figure that out.

"He died brave." Azazel said as he kicked Com's corpse like it was a football. That made me mad, but I couldn't even move. "Another failed victim of this system. The Divine have failed him, see?"

"You..." I was beyond angry. I wanted to kill him, Azazel. I need to destroy him. "YOU ARE THE ONE WHO KILLED HIM!"

"Oh? But remember that the Gods did this. Their petty wars had nothing to do with his story. All he wanted was to cross the mountain they destroyed. He yearned for the forgiveness of the divine, instead of you. That's what Gods do, Michael, they make the universe suffer and think the wrong things."

I wasn't even listening. I only wanted to taste his blood on my tongue. I wanted to blind him, and carve a drawing on his back.

"That green girl with the Archon Residue." Azazel said. "It seems she hasn't fulfilled our deal. This place isn't burning purple."

What is he talking about?

"Well, no matter." Azazel continued. "I'll kill her soon and that tutor of hers. That's what happens when you don't fulfill promises. But this place is destroyed enough." His arms opened wide. "Soon, all of this will be gone. I needed evidence, and now I have it."

"Evidence?" I said.

"Evidence of the damage done by the divine. A destroyed Purgatory, with millions suffering all around us. They did this. Honestly, it would've looked better if that green girl did what she was supposed to do." He laughed. "And... And the others. Cersei and Light, and more. Haha... Shit, I don't think I even needed them to do the Wildfire stuff." He laughed even harder. "I just did it because I could! I thought it was entertaining! The pursuit of mortals to become Gods!"

What the actual fuck.

Wha... What the fuck.

"It was alot more work than I needed to do." Azazel stated. "But it never hurts to do more for a little more result."

This man is insane. He's just plain sadistic. What the hell is he? What does he mean he did it because he could? Even Alizeh wasn't like that!

Azazel turned around to watch the main show, Haruhi vs Lucifer.

By this point, Lucifer had a few small body parts missing, all his teeth gone, some skin burnt, his manhood is gone and cut, and yet he still laughed whenever she hit him.

And she, Haruhi, she was so consumed with rage that her head turned red. You could feel the heat of her fury from here. Each punch broke a bone in Lucifer's body. She wasn't even screaming words anymore at him, she was just screaming pure madness. In all my years of experience, I have never seen hatred as pure as hers. Her eyes were glowing red, and they were crying.

She knocked him to the ground. She walked to where she can see the top of his head. While gripping him to the point she's crushing flesh, she lifted his head up slightly.

Haruhi's hands laid on where Lucifer's ears used to be. Her leg on his torso to make sure he doesn't move away.

"AAAAGGGHHHH!!!" She screamed the loudest scream I've ever heard. A scream filled with emotion so angry, so hateful, so much grief, so much sadness.

And she pulled, she pulled hard. Lucifer's neck began to slightly elongate, until red spots appeared like the pattern of a sponge. And then, little by little, flesh disconnected, strings of red were broken, and red fell all over the floor.

Then, Haruhi fully ripped Lucifer's head off.

It included the spine. She crushed his head so powerfully that the spine turned to dust, and the head was comparable to ground beef.

But she didn't even stop, even though he was already dead. She took what was left of his headless body, and stomped on it until it was flat enough to be part of the ground. Each stomp, she screamed pain and dismay. Tears cleaned off the blood on her face.

And finally, she was done. Lucifer was gone. His body thinner than paper, his head reduced to mush, and his bones to dust.

"AAAAAAHHHHHHHHH!!!!!!" Haruhi screamed into the abyss. She had won the war, she had finally gotten revenge. She took the mush of Lucifer's head and let the blood consume her, she bathed in it, she drank it, and she was still screaming. That yell was filled with every emotion possible, but it was mostly grief. Nothing can bring Kyon back.

"Hah...." She breathed deeply, sighs of relief, and wept tears of agony. "Shit... Fuck..." Her hands covered her face as she sobbed.

"H-Haruhi..." I tried calling out to her, but even my throat hurt.

And then, Azazel began to walk.

"Oh, your grace..." Azazel said as he circled around Haruhi. "Look what desiring to be human did to you..."

Haruhi simply continued to sob.

"Human emotions have destroyed your divine self." Azazel stated. "You let love and grief consume you. A God shouldn't feel the need to avenge, they simply need to govern. Now look at you... Your feelings have destroyed us all. Look at it."

Haruhi's head turned to look around the destroyed realm of Purgatorio. A mountain in pieces, a pool of corpses, people running for their lives, people fighting for their lives, and so much more suffering.

"Can't you see? Becoming human was a mistake." Azazel got closer to her ear. "Their feelings are complicated and complex... Not even deities can understand emotion. And your emotions did all of this."

"I... I didn't..."

"Didn't what?"

"I..." Haruhi spoke faintly. "I should've stayed in the Empyrean... If I never went out, then...none of my people would've suffered because of my feelings..."

"You thought that too with Kyon." Azazel said. "You never loved anyone else again nor made a true friend again, because as long as you were a deity, everyone suffers around you. I bring to you good news, Haruhi, everyone will suffer as long as you are here. As long as you are a deity, everyone will be in pain. You cannot avoid hurting others, you are a God."

Haruhi began to cry even harder.

"Look at what you've done, you murderer. They're all dead again. Your paradise is destroyed. The afterlife is no longer a place of rest once life is over. Maybe it never was. A place that places people in a location based on their ethics will always fail, for morality is never that simple. You've made a place where men fester on negativity. There was never a Heaven, only Hell."

"T-Then...What do I do...?" Haruhi begged for an answer.

Azazel answered by placing a gun in her hands. A pistol.

"If you want to end your pain and every else's, then kill yourself and take the afterlife with you." Azazel said.

My heart fell into my throat as I heard those words.

"Do it, Haruhi." Azazel smiled. "With no afterlife, no one has to suffer in it, in this scorching hell you've made. And if you take yourself along with it, you can no longer feel anything. No sadness, no anger, no happiness, simply nothing. Everyone will be saved from the afterlife and you, and you will be at peace."

"HARUHI!" I yelled out. "DON'T DO IT! YOU'RE GOING TO ERASE ZILLIONS OF PEOPLE HERE!"

"Do not listen to him, Haruhi." Azazel retaliated. "The afterlife is burning, how can they go up from this? As long as this system is alive, all will suffer."

"THAT'S NOT TRUE! HARUHI, THIS ISN'T WHAT KYON WOULD WANT! LISTEN TO ME!"

"As long as a realm ruled by the divine exists, people will suffer by the divine. Burn it all, Haruhi, end this suffering."

"HARUHI! PLEASE!"

"Poor thing..." Azazel touched Haruhi's cheek. "You must be so tired of this... It's okay... You can rest now, and so can everyone. Just point the gun to your head..."

"HARUHI!!!"

"..." Haruhi sat in silence for a while, until she stood up.

Her face didn't even look like it was capable of emotion. Her aura as a deity seemed to be gone. Only left with this empty husk of a person. This...human.

She placed the gun on the side of her head, and pulled the trigger.

She fell to the ground, and her blood joined everyone else's. Her eyes, lifeless. Unmoving, gone.

And I can't help but think of how it might be our fault that this happened. Other people pushed her to this point, other people couldn't save her. Her wish to be human backfired, and she experienced the pain that we held. It didn't matter what we all were, we were her creations. We have failed her by simply being.

God is dead. God remains dead. And we have killed her. How shall we comfort ourselves, the murderers of all murderers? What was holiest and mightiest of all that the world has yet owned has bled to death under our knives: who will wipe this blood off us? What water is there for us to clean ourselves?

...

"Well, that's over with." Azazel said. "I better get out of here before everything goes to shit. Look, it's already happening. The end of the afterlife."

I looked and saw everything become brighter, including me. And it...hurt.

She's done it, she's killed herself and is taking the afterlife with it. We're doomed.

"Welp, see you all soon." Azazel said as his sword opened a portal to a place I know not of.

Everything felt like it was burning, yet the pain contained a strange sense of calmness. Is this what it feels like to have your soul erased?

Everyone around me stopped whatever they were doing and...let the light take them.

The afterlife was being destroyed, and there's nothing we can do. So why not lay down and close our eyes?

Goodbye, Inferno, Purgatorio, and Paradiso.

I failed my mission, but... I can hear my heart beating now.

And I-

Darkness.

But my soul wasn't erased.

"AH!" I woke up in some small white room. Wires connected all over my body, my heart beating rapidly.

"Jesus, you look like you've seen something horrible." A man said beside me.

I looked, and...it was Obama.

I... They brought me back to life before my soul would be erased by the end of the afterlife.

"Obama...?"

"Aqua called me a few minutes ago to tell me the afterlife was fucked. That's when I knew I had to bring you back. She may be racist, but she can be helpful- are you crying?"

Huh?

Oh. I was crying.

"So...So much happened..." I said. "I...I failed the mission-"

"Hey hey, it's okay." Obama tried reassuring me. "You're safe now. You're back to the world of the living."

"The afterlife is...gone." I closed my eyes. "Oh god... The people I met there... MLK, Jaime, oh god no..."

Yet, despite this grief of the ones I have lost, my heart remained with a feeling of fury.

"Obama." I stopped crying and spoke. "The mission isn't over yet."

"Huh?"

"Somewhere out there in the universe, the culprit behind the destruction of Heaven and Hell is flying. We need to find him, and then we have to kill him."

I will not rest until justice is achieved. For Haruhi, for Com, for everyone Azazel manipulated. That sadistic shit.

When the time comes, I will be the one to rip his head off.

...

Guizhong POV

We climbed the steps of the Empyrean in search of Jaime's sister and Aladiel. Jaime was running quite fast, and we had to keep up, all the while avoiding Wildfire since the Empyrean was a tight space. I think I got burned a few times.

What I found was that the Empyrean was empty, and so were the places before it, especially since it was a place for Angels. Were they all in Purgatory? No that couldn't be, some were left to guard Heaven.

As we reached closer and closer to the rainbow book where God resided, some strange things started appearing on the ground.

"Are those...holes?" MLK said. There were indeed holes on the ground, which seemed to be burning from Wildfire.

"The Wildfire burned the floor so hard that...uh-" I tried explaining it. "Where do these holes go?"

"You don't think Cersei and Aladiel went through these, do you?" Jaime asked. "Some of these can fit a human."

"It is likely." Tolkien stated. "I mean, no one else but us are here in the Empyrean, and we searched everywhere."

"Damn it, you're right." Jaime agreed. "In that case, which hole did they go into?"

"Be careful, Jaime." Tolkien urged. "We do not know where these holes lead to."

Jaime carefully looked into the holes to see what laid below. "Uh... Grass and sea?" Jaime said, confused.

"Let me see." MLK looked into one of the holes. "That...that looks like a city."

"Shit." I just realized what these are. "Heaven is above worlds. Of course. These are entrances to the world of the living."

"Wait, do we come back to life if we go through here?" Jaime asked.

"It seems we'd die again if we went through, since we seem to be above these lands. In the sky. Which makes sense for Heaven." MLK stated.

"Earth isn't the only world that contains mortals that can enter the afterlife. There are millions of those throughout the universe." I stated.

"Well, the sky in this hole I'm looking at isn't blue, so it's definitely not our world."

"I don't come from Earth." Jaime stated. "I come from Planetos."

VRAAAUUMMM!!! Wildfire exploded beside us.

"Shit. Do we pick a hole and fall through?" I asked hastily. "How would we even survive the fall?"

"It's better than being here." MLK stated. "Find a hole that leads directly to an ocean. It doesn't matter what planet it is, they're all civilizations. We'll be safer-"

VRAAAUUMMM!!! Wildfire exploded directly below us. We were consumed by the fires.

The last thing I saw before I went unconscious was blood, and...my body becoming weirdly bright?

But it didn't matter, I felt weirdly calm. Maybe this is okay...

Maybe I should go to sleep...

...

Gamebang POV

We ran across the entirety of Heaven. We were back in the 2nd. Everything was falling apart because of the Wildfire. Collei told me how she entered the afterlife, and so we're trying to head back to Hell and find the gates.

"We're almost there, Collei!" I held her hand as we ran. She nodded in response.

Her Archon Residue powers seemed to have been sealed back into her neck thanks to my amazing talk no jutsu skills. It can only remain in her neck if she is in the right state of mind, and I have to keep her this way. I can't let it corrupt her mind again. She's back to her normal self.

"AH!" She screamed. I felt it too. Pain. I don't know what it was, nothing even touched us.

And then, suddenly, everything around us started becoming brighter. It had this burning feeling, but yet it felt peaceful. Everyone stopped running and embraced this pain, even Collei.

Even the Wildfire seemed to get brighter. Everything was becoming whiter.

But I knew this feeling. It's death. I felt it a thousand times before. In a multitude of adventures, this is what an end feels like.

And what do we say to the God of Death? Not today.

"COLLEI! SNAP OUT OF IT!" I kept running despite everything in my body telling me to give up, and I still held Collei's hand and took her with me, even as she seemed to be at peace with everything that was happening. I wasn't going to let her die.

But something weird started happening. Wildfire that was burning the ground seemed to open up little holes. And when I looked inside those holes, they led to...places. Lands that... Cities... People...

Oh my god, it's the world of the living.

But the hole I was looking in didn't seem to be Earth. It wasn't Teyvat. It was some other world.

Then, more burning holes appeared on the ground. I looked into each of them to find my world, my home. I needed to get her home.

Every hole I looked, it wasn't Teyvat. Just some different planet, some different civilization. And everything was getting too bright, and the pain only kept getting more and more peaceful. By then, people were already disappearing left and right. I didn't know where they went, but they let the brightening death take them.

We weren't about to be next. I was going to make sure of that.

As the afterlife was destroying itself, I found it.

I fucking found it. I goddamn fucking found it by dumb luck.

It's right there, this hole I found. It leads to Teyvat.

Next problem presented itself. The hole was in the sky, and I didn't know how we would survive the fall down. It seemed really high too, above the clouds.

I never saw the entirety of the world like this before. I see all of Teyvat. All of the regions. I see it all through this little hole. It's actual-

"AGH!" I said as the pain got at its worst. It was begging me to give in and die in peace. I wasn't going to die.

Everything was almost pure white, there was no time to think. There is no time left, we had to jump into the hole and back to Teyvat, and somehow hope we land in the sea and not on solid ground.

Collei looked half asleep by this point. Not like this. I'm bringing her home now.

"HIYA!" I jumped into the hole and took Collei with me. And then, the brightness from our bodies disappeared, and so did that painful peaceful feeling.

And thus, we re-entered the world of the living.

"AAHHH!!!" Collei was screaming as we were falling through the clouds. I see Celestia, but it was too far away for us to land on. We were heading straight to the ground.

"AH SHIT!" The force of the fall made me let go of Collei. No, shit, not like this.

Come on, Gamebang, damn you. Fly to her. Act like you're swimming or something in the air. You only have a few seconds until you hit the ground. Don't die after everything you've been through. Do it. Do it for her.

I got to her as fast as I could, doing the methods of swimming to get closer to her, and it worked. As she was screaming in fear, I tried to grab her hand again, but the fall's forces were too intense, making me unfocused.

"COLLEI!" I yelled. "TAKE MY HAND!"

She looked at me with fear in her eyes. She didn't want to die.

"Come on..." I said to her as the clouds made us feel like we were in a completely grey space. "We need to head back home..." I got closer and closer to her. "Like I told you... It's gonna be okay. Trust me."

Collei took a deep breath, and then she took hold of my hand. She held it tight, and I did too.

And then, we went under the clouds, and the lands of Teyvat were more visible and closer than ever.

"*Ūṣe ȩ*" The voice said once again in my head. "*Ȧĥe šwørd*"

Somehow, I felt reassured that everything would be okay, because of the voice. As if I knew what to do from this point on. I looked at Collei as she held my hand. I am willing to get her home at any costs.

"Close your eyes, Collei." I told her. "Hold my hand, and don't let go."

I took out the sword from my pants once again, and it lit on fire once again. I don't know what I am doing, but there is hope.

The sun was rising, and we were about to fall into the level of Dragonspine's summit. It was a new day.

There was no Gods I could yell to, for they all have forsaken me. There was no higher power I could beg to for my survival. All I had was me.

So... I ask myself to use whatever this sword has to make us survive this fall. No, I want to give myself the power to bring Collei home. Even if it means my death, it doesn't matter. I'd do anything for her, as if she was my own daughter.

Feel the wind passing through you, the temperature getting warmer and warmer. Breathe in the air that isn't Wildfire. See the blue skies once again. And let it all go for her. Defy the impossible, like you always do.

Come on, me, swing the damn sword and bring her back to the Avidya Forest.

Come on, Gamebang, let's bring Collei home.

...

I held Collei tight in my arms to make sure she didn't fall away from me.

I felt something grow on my back.

And what was once a fall turned into flight.

I had grown golden angelic wings, and I was on my way to fly her back home.

As we flew across the entire world, Collei was mesmerized by the views. And for the first time in what felt so long, she was laughing to herself.

We flew above Snezhnaya, Natlan, Liyue, Inazuma, Monstadt, Fontaine, and finally Sumeru. My flight became slower and careful as we started to land back onto the grass of the Avidya Forest.

And finally, we landed. In front of all the Forest Rangers, in front of Tighnari. They watched as we delicately touched the ground, thanks to my new wings.

I let Collei go, and she walked back to Tighnari.

"I'm home." She told him.

"Is...that Gamebang?" Tighnari asked Collei.

"Yeah." Collei responded.

"What...what is he?" Tighnari asked once again.

I stood with the Flaming Sword in hand, and my wings flowing amidst the wind.

I answered Tighnari's question. "I am an Angel."

...

Yoimiya POV

Hour 11

It was now 6:55 AM. 5 more minutes until the experiment is over.

We spent the last remaining time just sitting down in this building, regaining our strengths and calming down. Just a peaceful time before this madness finally ended.

6:56 AM. I am more than happy that this madness would be over. So much bloodshed tonight, it was completely inhumane.

6:57 AM. Ena and Emiko are sleeping, but they will be okay. Historia and Eren are watching the sun rise by the edge of the room. They look like a couple right now, but you know, they're both gay, so...

6:58 AM. I sit down with Kazuha. We've been together throughout this entire hellish night. It's safe to say our friendship has been drastically changed. I think... We're closer than ever now. We're both survivors.

6:59 AM. The last minute felt like an eternity. But time always passes by, even if you don't want it to.

Ah...

7:00 AM. A loud horn echoed throughout Ritou, indicating the end of the experiment.

Hour 12

Ena and Emiko woke up and heard it.

We all stood up, and made our way down this building and back to the outside world.

So many people walking to the hospital, so many injured... Yet, there were more bodies in the streets. So much red.

I can't help but think that our government did this. The NFI. All this violence... I blame them entirely.

All of us had trouble walking due to our wounds, but we all helped each other to keep moving forward. We were all truly...a pack of survivors. And so are all the people walking alongside us. We all survived the night.

A gigantic weight has been lifted from my chest. It's over.

Well... For now.

But right now, in this moment, everything is okay.

And though, our streets may be stained in blood, it began to rain, washing away the crimson of our community. This rain felt different, and... I felt free in this moment.

The experiment has ended.

...

Michael POV

I walked outside headquarters. Obama went to sleep now that I was back in the world of the living. I don't know, I wanted to breathe fresh air that wasn't fire I guess.

I never felt more happier to see the sky. I never felt more relieved to be back in this world.

But then, a water droplet landed on my hand. And...it felt familiar.

"MLK...?" I said as I looked at the small drop of water on my hand. Then, another drop came on my arm. I didn't recognize it, but it felt different too.

Then, it was raining, and it felt...like souls.

If the afterlife was destroyed, then...their souls must've turned into this. And now they rain upon the world, and to the other millions of worlds that contain life out there in the universe.

The universe is raining with the dead, and the dead are returning back to their homes.

I think we all eventually return back to our roots, to our homes.

And the dead are back in their home, and shall sink back into the world's floors by sand and dirt and ocean, into soil, to forever be preserved. They're finally back home, where they can truly rest in peace.

Chapter 9: The wars to come.

Kujou Sara POV

We arrive in Kannazuka. The sun has fully arrived and has never looked better. The rain though, it's annoying.

"It's probably not safe for me to take you to Watatsumi Island." Kokomi told me as she carried her stuff out of our boat.

"Wha- Your Highness, I have nowhere to go." I stated.

"Kannazuka isn't exactly high priority government property. Hide in some remote area around here and you should be safer here than you will be in Watatsumi, which due to our 'alliance' with the NFI, might make it their land too."

"But... I wanna fight." I said.

"Sara, the revolution has been fucked anally. I'm gonna need so much fucking sleep to think of our next move. Just hide here, please. We can't lose another soldier."

I didn't want to lay down while the NFI was doing shitty things, but for the sake of the revolution, I reluctantly nodded.

"Good. I'll see you soon." Kokomi said as she walked away, back to her home.

While me, I had no home anymore. I was homeless. My clan is gone, and...

It's gonna be a hard time, but everything I do, I do for this country. So, I will survive to keep fighting.

The battle isn't over yet, it has only begun.

...But this rain really is fucking me over. I need shelter.

Ah shit... I only know one person who has a place here.

Well... Might as well.

I took out my phone and called them. They answered.

"Uh- Hey..." I awkwardly said. "Can I stay over your place, Itto?"

"Huh, why." Itto asked over the phone.

"I'll explain once I'm there. Please, let me stay."

...

[Insert GenshinPlace member] POV

Aqua walked back into the throne room after she was done calling PolandBall for whatever reason. She called me for business.

"So... Com truly is dead, huh." Aqua said. "And so is the entire afterlife."

Those words hurt. I worked so hard to get Com on the right path, and I really did care... "Can we do something for him, your Highness?"

"Well..." Aqua didn't really know what to do. "All we can do is build an empty grave, and attend his funeral since no one else would."

God, he didn't even have that many friends... He was so young too. He wasn't even 30.

"I mourn his loss, [Insert GenshinPlace member], I truly do." Aqua spoke. "But... The death of the afterlife only means one thing. There is something out there. Something dangerous. Something that hates the divine."

"Huh?"

"[Insert GenshinPlace member], the mission isn't over yet. Not by a longshot. I may not be a deity anymore, but I have friends who still are. I fear for their safety."

"Your Highness... What's going to happen?"

"Well, whatever is out there, killing Gods left and right, we will meet them." Aqua stood from her throne and grabbed her staff. "Come on, [Insert GenshinPlace member], Atlantis is going to war."

...

Yoimiya POV

"We're going back home." Historia told us. "Back to Konda Village."

"We're going to miss you two." Kazuha said. I nodded.

"A lot has happened last night, but if it ever happens again, I know who to come to for survival." Eren said.

"Thank you, Attack and Queen." I said. "Maybe we can all meet sometime and...maybe have gay sex again?-"

"WHA-WHAT!? GAY SEX!?" Eren shouted. "EEWWWWWWW!!!"

"THAT'S DISGUSTING!" Historia started shouting as well. "WHY WOULD YOU GUYS SUGGEST SUCH A THING!"

Kazuha was confused. "Wha-"

"WE'RE NOT GAY!" Eren stated. "WE UH ONLY DID THOSE THINGS LAST NIGHT BECAUSE WE WERE SEEING WHAT CRIMES WE CAN DO. RIGHT, HISTORIA!"

"RIGHT! IT IS ONLY A COINCIDENCE WE CHOSE SPECIFICALLY GAY SEX AS A CRIME!"

"But it isn't even a crime-" I said.

"WELL IT SHOULD BE!" Historia said. "YOU TWO SHOULD BE ASHAMED FOR LIKING THE SAME GENDER! SO DISGUSTING!"

"Come on, Historia." Eren told her. "Let's go back to our totally heterosexual lives."

"Yeah, screw these guys."

And uh, they left us. Me and Kazuha were basically just confused.

"What was that about." I asked Kazuha.

"I don't even know anymore." He answered.

...

The news came in, declaring the experiment to be a success.

The NFI has gotten the approval to make the events of the experiment into a monthly activity. This time, widely available to the entirety of Inazuma, where everyone can participate.

And it seems Holden Hiscok is winning the election, bringing the NFI's power to higher levels. Although, the election doesn't end until 3 months later.

The NFI has won, and they're going to make whatever happened last night happen every month.

They even already gave the event a name.

Once a month, 12 hours throughout the night, all crime will be legal. This event is now called The Purge.

...

Morbius POV

The night was over, and so was the battle at sea. We had to clean the ship quickly before we landed on Ritou's dock. Don't want the sailors seeing the bloody mess we made, and the bodies.

"This is just a taste of the future." Ei told me as we were throwing away bodies into the sea. "A sight of the wars to come."

"Well, whatever is coming, I will not hold back." I said. "The NFI is going to fuckin pay, let me tell you."

Ei sighed and continued cleaning the blood off the edges.

Soon enough, we cleaned the whole ship, and then we landed in Ritou, in Inazuma.

And since we're on a undercover mission to destroy the NFI, Ei has gone in disguise. She just looks like a commoner now. It's actually quite cute.

"Hey, now you can actually walk amongst your people." I told Ei as we left the ship.

"Yeah... You're right." Ei said. "Maybe this way... I can truly understand the people of Inazuma."

"There you go."

Beidou and her crew came with us. The goal was set. All of us, we're going to take down the NFI and save Yae Miko.

And while I'm at it, I'm going to drink NFI blood whenever I can.

...

Gamebang POV

Collei showed me my own dead body in her basement. It seems that my soul has regained a new body in order to be able to live back in the world of the living. This isn't because of the sword, this is simply how it is.

So looking at my soulless dead body with my new winged body, it was truly strange.

Thankfully, the Forest Rangers still didn't know about this corpse hiding in the house. So while we still could, me and Collei burnt the body to ashes. My old body was gone, and I was physically someone new.

After that, Collei went back to Tighnari since she missed him so much. And I stayed inside the house, where I was shot in the head.

Actually, who shot me again? Who killed me? Because that shit is really concerning to me since I have just risen from the dead and would like to keep my life again. Does Collei know?

And this time, dying is alot worse since you don't go to an afterlife anymore. Your soul gets automatically erased from existence once you die, sending you to nothing. The afterlife is gone.

I'm gonna make sure I don't die so easily again.

"I will m̄ake sur̄e of th̄at." The voice spoke in my head again.

"Who are you?" I asked the voice.

"Look in your hand."

And so I did, and I was holding the Flaming Sword.

"Sword... You can speak?"

"In your mind, Gamebang."

"Oh."

"I am the one who gave you those wings to fly."

"Well, uh, I am thankful. But...why me?"

"Why you?" The voice said. *"Because you stopped Alizeh. That is the man we need for the wars to come."*

"The wars to come?" I asked.

"Gamebang, my real identity is... I am Michael the Archangel."

"Whaaaaat."

"I have hidden my consciousness within this sword for the one who I chose to wield it."

"And you chose me because I stopped my own daughter."

"The mental strength of that is what I need of a wielder. And the wielder has a purpose. Like I used this sword to vanquish Lucifer into Hell during his Rebellion, this sword is the key to killing the Devil."

"Killing Lucifer?"

"No, Lucifer is dead now. A new Devil has risen, and you have met him before."

"You don't mean..."

"Azazel, the Angel of Corruption. It is the goal of this sword to make sure he is slain."

"The guy Collei made a deal with..."

"Gamebang, when the time comes, all you have to do is swing this sword into his chest, and all Gods will be saved."

Chapter 10: The path to union.

1 month later...

Eren POV

It is 1 week from now until the first real Purge happens. And remembering my times from the experiment, I am not excited at all.

The NFI sucks ass, let me tell you.

Me and Historia are joining up with Kazuha and Yoimiya again since we trust them. Ena and Emiko have left Inazuma because of its chaos.

There's no real way for us to avoid participating this time, the Purge will happen all across Inazuma. And if the results from the experiment happen again, this country will be painted in blood.

It's scary to think about...

Uh any other news? Oh yeah, the election. Holden Hiscok is still winning the votes against people no one really knows.

In fact, me and Historia are currently at a Presidential Debate. Holden Hiscok is annihilating his opponents.

Holden Hiscok is bald and doesn't look like an Inazuman. Sometimes I think the votes are actually fake, but I don't know, I'm not voting anyway. Actually, Holden kinda looks like Andrew Tate now that I think about it.

"And that's why The Purge will benefit Inazuma." Holden Hiscok finished his speech.

"Alright, that was a good speech, Hiscok." The interviewer said. "Anyway, people of Inazuma, we have some recent news up ahead."

Hm?

"There is a new candidate for President." The interviewer stated.

Everyone was suddenly muttering to each other about this. Everyone didn't really know what to feel.

Holden Hiscok didn't really care since he thought he was undefeatable.

And then the new candidate stepped on stage, and his eyes widened, and so did the audience.

"Hello, I am Sangonomiya Kokomi, running for President of Inazuma." She spoke into the mic. "I am the leading Inazuman Representative of the newly founded Political Organization known as PolandBall."

She looked into Holden Hiscok's eyes and smiled. Holden only felt fury.

And thus, the real election begins here.

...

[Insert GenshinPlace member] POV

Polandball called for another mission. A revolution against the NFI Organization in Inazuma.

I asked Aqua for permission to go, she approved, stating that there may be a clue there on our hunt for the one who kills Gods.

Soon enough, I began to swim to Inazuma.

...

Gamebang POV

"Do your exams well, okay?" I told Collei as I packed my bags.

"It's gonna be hard studying without you..." She told me.

"You can do it. You can do anything, just believe it." I said.

"Do you really have to go to Inazuma?" She asked.

"I have to. It's duty." I stated. "I'm a member of PolandBall. I am bound to keep this world safe."

Collei smiled and then came to hug me. I hugged her back.

"I'm gonna miss you..." She said to me.

"I won't be gone forever." I reassured her. "I will return."

She let go of me, and I walked out her door. "Oh and by the way." I said. "You and Izerak better take care of my mansion."

"Will do."

"Awesome, thanks Collei."

As I entered outside, I took one last look at Collei. It's alarming that I won't be there to protect her always, but I know she can protect herself. She's strong. She can do it.

As for me? Well, I have a mission to do. Just another day of saving the world. I suppose that's how it's always been.

I took out the Flaming Sword. "You ready to fly, Mikey?"

"*Don't call me that.*" He said.

"I can't call you Michael, I got two friends called that and we call one by their last name instead."

"*Fine, Gamebang.*"

"Awesome."

I looked up to the sky, and my golden wings escaped from my back. Collei was watching me.
And then, I began to fly away. To Inazuma I go.

...

Collei POV

It's been a day since Gamebang left. Me and Izerak have taken refuge in his large mansion. Eating all his food since we were allowed to. Overflowing the pool although I don't think we were allowed to do that. I don't think we thought of how he's going to pay these bills.

Ah, forget it. He's rich anyway.

And today was a special day. It's been a month since I went to Monstadt. Last time I went, I was looking for Hell. Well, I can't exactly find it anymore, so.

It's Ludi Harpastum in Monstadt, and I couldn't wait to celebrate it with my friends there. Plus, it's gonna be Izerak's first Ludi Harpastum.

"Come on, Iz, we gotta go." I called for him since he was taking too long packing his things.

"Be patient, Collei, the event hasn't started yet." Izerak said as he went to me.

We left the mansion and headed to Monstadt.

When we arrived, we immediately went into Amber's house for refuge. Amber doesn't mind!

We knocked on her door, and no one answered. We knocked again.

"She's usually quick to answer..." I said.

"Maybe she's sleeping." Izerak said.

But then, the door opened, and Amber was there.

"Oh, hey Ambe-" She ran past us. She kept running away.

"Huh?" I was confused.

"Uh, Collei?" Izerak said as he looked inside the house.

I peeked and...it was Eula? She was crying?

Izerak went inside and sat beside Eula. "What's wrong?"

Eula, in her sobbing words. "A-Amber got mad at me..."

"Why?" Izerak asked.

"Uh... I think I know why." I said as I saw a newspaper on a desk.

I read it.

Eula Lawrence was found to have murdered the entire Lawrence Clan.

Oh fucking shit.

"I... I had to..." Eula said.

You know, I have my own personal biases against Lawrence members, but...this was clearly something else.

For the first time in my life, I ought to comfort Eula. "We're listening. Tell us what happened."

...

Michael POV

"I think I'm gonna go search for my parents." Lily told me.

"Is that so?" I said.

"Yeah... Never knew my parents. All I know is that I time traveled here and you know, crisis in one year from now."

"11 months now, actually." I stated.

"Scary..." Lily said.

"Whatever fate has in store 11 months from now, we're going to beat it." I told her.

"I hope so." Lily said. "You and Obama are going to Inazuma, right?"

"Yup."

"Guess I'll be all alone in these headquarters."

"Well, nothing we can do about it. Me and Obama leave by night."

"Well, since it's likely we won't see each other for a time, I wish you the best of luck, Michael."

"I'm gonna be fine." I said. "I know I am. I still have so much to do."

I walked away from Lily. I needed to do something before me and Obama set sail for Inazuma.

I sat by the beach, watching the sun set down. Letting the sea wash my feet off of sand. And I had my phone in hand, and a bottle of beer on the other.

You know... If there's anything Com did during his years of fame that didn't involve selfish things... He was genuinely a good song writer.

So... This drink is dedicated to you, Com. May you find rest in the eternal nothingness.

I pressed play on my phone.

...

Now playing: With You - Com Insydeme

*Life is one big path that we all strive to pass through quickly
Never taking in the things that we pass by that scream "you will miss me."
So take it slow and steady, take in your surroundings and live on high
Oh, It's only a passing time.*

*All the power you hold will never bring you comfort in truth
But the things before your rise are the true fruit, your past roots
You've grown so fast, and yet you still are so small
Even when you have it all*

*Sometimes, it's only the simple things that matter to one, for no hint
Not gold or jewelry but someone to watch the sun with
The top feels so isolating at times
Especially when others destroy all the vines*

*Oh, how it would feel to be like everyone else
To stop living simply for myself
I want to be your lover
Brother, oh brother, please let me be your brother*

*Oh, it's okay now, the debt's gone through
You're safe now, it's okay now, I'll be here with you.*

THE END

Nothing to see here. Be on your way.

Trust me.

Ah, damn you.

...

"You two don't seem like you're from here." Jean said. "Where are you from?"

"Well, my lady, I am uh...from a distant land. And my uh father here too." The man said. Beside him was an elderly person who definitely didn't look like his father.

"Well, we can spare you two a few rooms in a local inn." Jean told them. "It is quite concerning you guys don't know where you're going. You guys should stay here in Monstadt for the time being."

"We will." The man replied.

"I'll write down your names so I can get you two registered in the town." Jean said. "What's your names?"

The man spoke. "This is J.R.R Tolkien, and I am Jaime Lannister."

Jean definitely didn't believe they were related.

“LOVE AND DECEPTION ARC”

TO BE CONTINUED IN...

GAMEBANG AND THE PURGE